

THE
HISTORY OF AMERICA,
K
IN TWO BOOKS.

CONTAINING,

- I. *A GENERAL HISTORY OF AMERICA.*
- II. *A CONCISE HISTORY OF THE LATE
REVOLUTION.*

EXTRACTED FROM
The American Edition
OF
THE ENCYCLOPÆDIA.

THE SECOND EDITION.

PHILADELPHIA,
PRINTED BY THOMAS BUBSON,
AT THE STONE-HOUSE, SOUTH SECOND-STREET,
M.DCC.XCV.

C O N T E N T S.

B O O K I.

GENERAL HISTORY OF AMERICA.

C H A P. I.

Extent and Boundaries of America—Grand Objects which it presents to view—its Mountains—Rivers—Lakes—its excessive Luxuriance of Vegetation—remarkable Prevalence of Cold.—accounted for—Climate not malignant—nor uncommonly infested with Insects and noxious Reptiles. Page 1

C H A P. II.

General Description of the Natives—their peculiarities of Ornament and Dress—remarkable Insensibility to Pain, and to the Inclemencies of Weather—terrible Trials undergone by their Chiefs. 18

C H A P. III.

Customs and Manners of the Aborigines of North-America, more particularly—their Pensiveness and Taciturnity—Form of Government—Public Assemblies—Wampums, or Belts. 30

C H A P. IV.

Customs, &c. of the Natives, continued.—Their Wars—Ceremonies at setting out—Ensigns—Military Habits—Quickness of their senses—Vigilance and Circumspection—Manner of Fighting—Treatment of Prisoners—Tortures—Constancy of the Sufferers—Surprising Contrast in the American Character. 35

C H A P.

CHAP. V.

Customs, &c. of the Natives, continued.—Treatment of their dead Friends—Superstitions—Condition of their Women—Ardent Love of Liberty—Crimes and Punishments—Peculiar Manners of different Nations—Longevity. 47

CHAP. VI.

Other Pictures of the Native Americans—Anecdote of an Algonquin Woman.—Reproached with Pusillanimity—Perfidy—Weakness of Understanding—Indolence and Stupidity—Vanity and Conceit—their Eloquence disparaged. 56

CHAP. VII.

All the Charges in the foregoing Chapter partial, and not free from misrepresentation—Buffon and M. de Pauw's Descriptions refuted—Errors as to their Want of Beard—Form and Aspect—Constitution and Corporeal Abilities—Labour and Industry—Mental Qualities.—M. de Pauw's proofs of their Cowardice refuted—Occasion of the famous Bull of Pope Paul III.—Representations of COLUMBUS—Conclusions concerning their Capacities—Ingenuity.—Tokens of Science.—Specimen of their Morality. 66

CHAP. VIII.

Buffon's Notions concerning the Degeneracy of the Inhabitants of the New-World, refuted by Mr. Jefferson—Their seeming Coldness to the Sex accounted for—Why they have few Children—their Sensibility, &c.—their Courage—Story of Logan—Specimen of Indian Eloquence.—Other Anecdotes—their Politeness and Civility—their Hospitality. 88

CONTENTS.

v

CHAP. IX.

Of the Peopling of America—Old and New-Continents supposed to have been formerly joined—At present separated only by a narrow Strait—Conjectures concerning the first Migrations into the New-Continent—Mr. Pennant's opinion—Customs, &c. common to the eastern Asiatics and the Americans—Brute Creation migrated by the same Route. 102

CHAP. X.

Remains of Antiquity in America. 120

CHAP. XI.

The Ancients supposed to have had some imperfect Notion of a New-World—Pretensions of the Welsh to the Discovery of America—Those of the Norwegians better founded—Projects of CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS—his Voyage—Astonishment occasioned by observing the Variation of the Compass—his perilous Situation—his Crew ready to mutiny—their Joy on descrying Land—they land on one of the islands of the New-World—the Continent afterwards discovered. 123

CHAP. XII.

Division of America—its Productions—its different Possessors—Vast Extent of the British Possessions before the late Revolution.

b

BOOK II.

HISTORY OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

CHAP. I.

State and Character of the British Colonies at the end of the War 1763—Causes of the Disturbances—Proceedings in the Colonies, previous to the Commencement of Hostilities. Page 143

CHAP. II.

Military Stores seized by the Americans—Skirmish at Lexington—Battle at Bunker's Hill—Crown-Point and Ticonderago taken—Articles of Union between the Colonies—Declaration on taking up Arms—Speech of the Commissioners from Congress to the Indians—Gen. WASHINGTON appointed Commander in Chief—Georgia accedes to the Confederacy. 177

CHAP. III.

The Canada Expedition—Disputes of Lord Dunmore with the Virginians—North, and South Carolina expel their Governors—Boston attacked, and evacuated. 196

CHAP. IV.

Congress declares the States independent—Siege of Quebec still continued—Gen. Thompson defeated—Insurrection of the Loyalists in North Carolina—Lord Dunmore finally driven out of Virginia—British attack Charleston, and are repulsed—Americans form a Navy. 209

CHAP. V.

Battle on Long Island—New-York abandoned—Battle at the White-Plains—British overrun the Jerseys—Rhode-Island taken—The British convey Vessels up the Lake Champlain, and destroy the Naval Force of the Americans—General Lee taken prisoner—Battles at Trenton and Princeton. 213

CHAP. VI.

Excursions of the British from New-York—Battle at Brandywine—Philadelphia taken—Battle at Germantown—Attack of Mud-Island—General Burgoyne's Expedition—and Surrender. 234

CHAP. VII.

Treaty between France and America—Conciliatory Bill despised—Philadelphia evacuated—French Fleet arrives in America—Expedition against Georgia—South Carolina invaded—D'Estaing's Expedition against Georgia—Expeditions of the British against the northern Provinces—Attack of Penobscot. 260

CHAP. VIII.

Spain joins the Confederacy against Great Britain—Expedition of the British against Charleston—Attack on Staten-Island—Proceedings of Congress—Arrival of the French Troops—Gen. Gates defeated—Gen. Arnold deserts—Unhappy Fate of Major André—Arnold's Reasons for his Conduct—other Reasons—Capture of Mr. Laurens. 287

CHAP. IX.

*Revolt of the Pennsylvania Line—Tarleton defeated—
Battle at Guildford—Battle at Eutaw—Action be-
tween the French and British Fleets off the Ches-
apeake—Capture of Cornwallis.* 311

CHAP. X.

*Sir Guy Carleton arrives at New-York with powers to
treat of Peace—Different Places evacuated by the
British Troops—Independency of America acknow-
ledged—The American Army disbanded, and Gen.
Washington resigns his Commission—Loss of Men and
Treasure by the War.* 349

A
GENERAL HISTORY
OF
AMERICA.

BOOK I.

CHAPTER I.

Extent and Boundaries of America—Grand Objects which it presents to view—its Mountains—Rivers—Lakes—its excessive Luxuriance of Vegetation—remarkable Prevalence of Cold—accounted for—Climate not malignant—nor uncommonly infested with Insects and noxious Reptiles.

AMERICA is one of the four quarters of the world, probably, the largest of the whole, and is, from its late discovery, frequently denominated the *New-World*, or *New-Hemisphere*.

This vast country extends from the 80th degree of north, to the 56th degree of south, latitude; and, where its breadth is known, from the 35th to the 136th degree of west longitude from
B London;

London; stretching between 8000 and 9000 miles in length, and in its greatest breadth 3690. It sees both hemispheres, has two summers and a double winter, and enjoys almost all the variety of climates which the earth affords. It is washed by the two great oceans. To the eastward, it has the Atlantic, which divides it from Europe and Africa; to the west, it has the Pacific or Great South-Sea, by which it is separated from Asia. By these seas it may, and does, carry on a direct commerce with the other three parts of the world.

America is not of equal breadth throughout its whole extent; but is divided into two great continents, called *North*, and *South*, *America*, by an isthmus 1500 miles long, and which, at Darien, about Lat. 9° N. is only 60 miles over. This isthmus forms, with the northern and southern continents, a vast gulph, in which lie a great number of islands, called the *West-Indies*, in contradistinction to the eastern parts of Asia, which are called the *East-Indies*.

“Next to the extent of the New-World, the grandeur of the objects which it presents to view, is most apt to strike the eye of an observer. Nature seems here to have carried on her operations upon a larger scale and with a bolder hand, and to have distinguished the features of this country by a peculiar magnificence. The mountains of America are much superior in height to those in the other divisions of the globe. Even the plain of Quito, which may be considered as the base of the Andes, is elevated farther above the sea than the top of the Pyrenees.” The most elevated point of the Andes, according to Don Ulloa, is
 twenty

twenty thousand, two hundred, and eighty feet, which is, at least, seven thousand, one hundred, and two feet above the Peak of Teneriffe, which is the highest known mountain in the ancient continent.

From the lofty and extensive mountains of America descend rivers with which the streams of Europe, of Asia, or of Africa, are not to be compared, either for length of course, or for the vast volumes of water which they pour into the oceans. The Danube, the Indus, the Ganges, or the Nile, in the Ancient Hemisphere, are not of equal magnitude with the St. Laurence, the Missouri, or the Mississippi, in North-America; or with the Maragnon, the Orinooco, or the Plata, in South-America. The rivers in the latter of these American continents are like vast arms of the sea.

“The lakes of the New-World are no less conspicuous for grandeur than its mountains and rivers. There is nothing in other parts of the globe which resembles the prodigious chain of lakes in North-America. They may be properly termed inland seas of fresh water; and even those of the second or third class of magnitude, are of larger circuit (the Caspian sea excepted) than the greatest lake of the ancient continent.”

The luxuriance of the vegetable creation in the New-World is extremely great. In the southern provinces, where the moisture of the climate is aided by the warmth of the sun, the woods are almost impervious, and the surface of the ground is hid from the eye, under a thick covering of shrubs, of herbs, and weeds. In the northern provinces, although the forests are not encum-

bered with the same wild luxuriance of vegetation, the trees of various species are generally more lofty, and often much larger, than in any other parts of the world.

One of the most remarkable circumstances, or features, of the New-World, is the general predominance of cold, throughout the whole extent of this great continent. Though we cannot, in any country, determine the precise degree of heat merely by the distance of the equator, because the elevation above the sea, the nature of the soil, &c. all affect the climate; yet, in the Ancient Continent, the heat is much more in proportion to the vicinity of the equator than in any part of America. Here the rigour of the frigid zone extends over half that which should be temperate by its position. Even in those latitudes where the winter is scarcely felt in the Old-Continent, it reigns with great severity in America, though during a short period. Nor does this cold, prevalent in the New-World, confine itself to the temperate zones; but extends its influence to the torrid zone also, considerably mitigating the excess of its heat.—Along the eastern coast, the climate, tho' more similar to that of the torrid zone in other parts of the earth, is nevertheless considerably milder than in those countries of Asia and Africa which lie in the same latitude. From the southern tropic to the extremity of the American continent, the cold is said to be much greater than in parallel northern latitudes even of America itself.

For this so remarkable difference between the climate of the New-Continent and the Old, various causes have been assigned by different authors,

authors. The following is the opinion of the celebrated Dr Robertson on this subject. "Though the utmost extent of America towards the north be not yet discovered, we know that it advances nearer to the pole than either Europe or Asia. The latter have large seas to the north, which are open during part of the year; and even when covered with ice, the wind that blows over them is less intensely cold than that which blows over land in the same latitudes. But, in America, the land stretches from the river St Laurence towards the pole, and spreads out immensely to the west. A chain of enormous mountains, covered with snow and ice, runs through all this dreary region. The wind passing over such an extent of high and frozen land, becomes so impregnated with cold, that it acquires a piercing keenness, which it retains in its progress through warmer climates; and is not entirely mitigated until it reach the gulph of Mexico. Over all the continent of North-America, a northwesterly wind and excessive cold are synonymous terms. Even in the most sultry weather, the moment that the wind veers to that quarter, its penetrating influence is felt in a transition from heat to cold no less violent than sudden. To this powerful cause we may ascribe the extraordinary dominion of cold, and its violent inroads into the southern provinces in that part of the globe.

"Other causes, no less remarkable, diminish the active power of heat in those parts of the American continent which lie between the tropics. In all that portion of the globe, the wind blows in an invariable direction from east to west. As this wind holds its course across the ancient

continent, it arrives at the countries which stretch along the western shore of Africa, inflamed with all the fiery particles which it hath collected from the sultry plains of Asia, and the burning sands in the African desarts. The coast of Africa is, accordingly, the region of the earth which feels the most fervent heat, and is exposed to the unmitigated ardour of the torrid zone. But this same wind, which brings such an accession of warmth to the countries lying between the river of Senegal and Cafraria, traverses the Atlantic-Ocean, before it reaches the American shore. It is cooled in its passage over this vast body of water; and is felt as a refreshing gale along the coasts of Brasil and Guiana, rendering these countries, though among the warmest in America, temperate, when compared with those which lie opposite to them in Africa. As this wind advances in its course across America, it meets with immense plains, covered with impenetrable forests; or occupied by large rivers, marshes, and stagnating waters, where it can recover no considerable degree of heat. At length it arrives at the Andes, which run from north to south through the whole continent. In passing over their elevated and frozen summits, it is so thoroughly cooled, that the greater part of the countries beyond them hardly feel the ardour to which they seem exposed by their situation. In the other provinces of America, from Terra-Fermè westward to the Mexican empire, the heat of the climate is tempered, in some places, by the elevation of the land above the sea; in others, by their extraordinary humidity; and in all, by the enormous mountains scattered over this tract. The islands

islands of America in the Torrid Zone are either small or mountainous, and are fanned alternately by refreshing sea and land breezes.

“The causes of the extraordinary cold towards the southern limits of America, and in the seas beyond it, cannot be ascertained in a manner equally satisfying. It was long supposed, that a vast continent, distinguished by the name of *Terra Australis Incognita*, lay between the southern extremity of America and the Antarctic pole. The same principles which account for the extraordinary degree of cold in the northern regions of America, were employed in order to explain that which is felt at Cape-Horn and the adjacent countries. The immense extent of the southern continent, and the large rivers which it poured into the ocean, were mentioned and admitted by philosophers as causes sufficient to occasion the unusual sensation of cold, and the still more uncommon appearances of frozen seas in that region of the globe. But the imaginary continent to which such influence was ascribed having been searched for in vain, and the space which it was supposed to occupy having been found to be an open sea; new conjectures must be formed with respect to the causes of a temperature of climate, so extremely different from that which we experience in countries removed at the same distance from the opposite pole.

“The most obvious and probable cause of the superior degree of cold towards the southern extremity of America, seems to be the form of the continent there. Its breadth gradually decreases as it stretches from St Antonia southwards, and from the bay of St Julian to the straits of Magellan

lan its dimensions are much contracted. On the east and west sides, it is washed by the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. From its southern point, it is probable that a great extent of sea, without any considerable tract of land, reaches to the Antarctic pole. In whichever of these directions the wind blows, it is cooled before it approaches the Magellanic regions, by passing over a vast body of water; nor is the land there of such extent, that it can recover any considerable degree of heat in its progress over it. These circumstances concur in rendering the temperature of the air in this district of America, more similar to that of an insular, than to that of a continental climate; and hinder it from acquiring the same degree of summer-heat, with places in Europe and Asia, in a corresponding northern latitude. The north wind is the only one that reaches this part of America, after blowing over a great continent. But, from an attentive survey of its position, this will be found to have a tendency rather to diminish than augment the degree of heat. The southern extremity of America is properly the termination of the immense ridge of the Andes, which stretches nearly in a direct line from north to south, through the whole extent of the continent. The most sultry regions in South-America, Guiana, Brasil, Paraguay, and Tucuman, lie many degrees to the east of the Magellanic regions. The level country of Peru, which enjoys the tropical heats, is situated considerably to the west of them. The north wind, then, though it blows over land, does not bring to the southern extremity of America an increase of heat collected in its passage over torrid regions; but,
before

before it arrives there, it must have swept along the summits of the Andes, and comes impregnated with the cold of that frozen region."

Another peculiarity in the climate of America is its excessive moisture in general. In some places, indeed, on the western coast, rain is not known; but, in all other parts, the moistness of the climate is as remarkable as the cold.—The forests wherewith it is every where covered, no doubt, partly, occasion the moisture of its climate; but the most prevalent and obvious cause is the vast quantity of water in the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, with which America is environed on all sides. Hence, those places where the continent is narrowest are deluged with almost perpetual rains, accompanied with violent thunder and lightning, by which some of them, particularly Porto-Bello, are rendered in a manner uninhabitable.

From the coldness and the moisture of America, an extreme malignity of climate has been inferred, and asserted by M. de Pauw, in his *Recherches Philosophiques sur les Americains*. Hence, according to the hypothesis of this author, the smallness and irregularity of the nobler animals, and the size and enormous multiplication of reptiles and insects.

But the supposed smallness and less ferocity of the American animals, the Abbé Clavigero observes, instead of the malignity, demonstrates the mildness and bounty of the climate, if we give credit to Buffon, at whose fountain M. de Pauw has drank, and of whose testimony he has availed himself against Don Pernetty. Buffon, who, in many places of his *Natural History* produces the
smallness

smallness of the American animals as a certain argument of the malignity of the climate of America; in treating afterwards of savage animals, in Tom. II. speaks thus: "As all things, even the most free creatures, are subject to natural laws, and animals as well as men are subjected to the influence of climate and soil, it appears that the same causes which have civilized and polished the human species in our climates, may have, likewise, produced similar effects upon other species. The wolf, which is, perhaps, the fiercest of all the quadrupeds of the temperate zone, is, however, incomparably less terrible than the tyger, the lion, and the panther of the torrid zone; and the white bear and hyena of the frigid zone. In America, where the air and the earth are more mild than those of Africa, the tyger, the lion, and the panther, are not terrible but in the name. They have degenerated, if fierceness, joined to cruelty, made their nature; or, to speak more properly, they have only suffered the influence of the climate: under a milder sky their nature also has become more mild. From climes which are immoderate in their temperature are obtained drugs, perfumes, poisons, and all those plants whose qualities are strong. The temperate earth, on the contrary, produces only things which are temperate; the mildest herbs, the most wholesome pulse, the sweetest fruits, the most quiet animals, and the most humane men, are the natives of this happy clime. As the earth makes the plants, the earth and plants make animals; the earth, the plants, and the animals make man. The physical qualities of man, and the animals which feed on other animals, depend, though
more

more remotely, on the same causes which influence their dispositions and customs. This is the greatest proof and demonstration, that in temperate climes every thing becomes temperate, and that in intemperate climes every thing is excessive; and that size and form, which appear fixed and determinate qualities, depend notwithstanding, like the relative qualities on the influence of climate. The size of our quadrupeds cannot be compared with that of an elephant, the rhinoceros, or sea-horse. The largest of our birds are but small if compared with the ostrich, the condore, and *casoare*." So far M. Buffon, whose text we have copied, because it is contrary to what M. de Pauw writes against the climate of America, and to Buffon himself, in many other places.

"If the large and fierce animals, says Clavigero, are natives of intemperate climes, and small and tranquill animals of temperate climes, as M. Buffon has here established; if mildness of climate influences the disposition and customs of animals, M. de Pauw does not well deduce the malignity of the climate of America from the smaller size and less fierceness of its animals; he ought rather to have deduced the gentleness and sweetness of its climate from this antecedent. If, on the contrary, the smaller size and less fierceness of the American animals, with respect to those of the old continent, are a proof of their degeneracy, arising from the malignity of the clime, as M. de Pauw would have it, we ought in like manner to argue the malignity of the climate of Europe from the smaller size and less fierceness of its animals, compared, with those of Africa. If a philosopher

pher of the country of Guinea should undertake a work in imitation of M. de Pauw, with this title, *Recherches Philosophiques sur les Europeens*, he might avail himself of the same argument which M. de Pauw uses, to demonstrate the malignity of the climate of Europe, and the advantages of that of Africa. The climate of Europe, he would say, is very unfavourable to the production of quadrupeds, which are found incomparably smaller, and more cowardly than ours. What are the horse and the ox, the largest of its animals, compared with our elephants, our rhinoceroses, our sea-horses, and our camels? What are its lizards, either in size or intrepidity, compared with our crocodiles? Its wolves, its bears, the most dreadful of its wild beasts, when beside our lions and tygers; Its eagles, its vultures, and cranes, if compared with our ostriches, appear only like hens."

As to the enormous size and prodigious multiplication of the insects and other little noxious animals, "The surface of the earth (says M. du Pauw), infected by putrefaction, was over-run with lizards, serpents, reptiles, and insects monstrous for size, and the activity of their poison, which they drew from the copious juices of this uncultivated soil, that was corrupted and abandoned to itself, where the nutritive juice became sharp, like the milk in the breast of animals which do not exercise the virtue of propagation. Caterpillars, crabs, butterflies, beetles, spiders, frogs, and toads, were, for the most part of an enormous corpulence in their species, and multiplied beyond what can be imagined. Panama is infested with serpents, Carthagena with clouds of enormous
bats,

bats, Porto-Bello with toads, Surinam with *kakerlacs*, or *cucarachas*, Guadaloupe, and the other colonies of the islands, with beetles, Quito with niguas, or chegoes, and Lima with lice and bugs. The ancient kings of Mexico, and the emperors of Peru, found no other means of ridding their subjects of those insects which fed upon them, than the imposition of an annual tribute of a certain quantity of lice. Ferdinand Cortes found bags full of them in the palace of Montezuma." But this argument, exaggerated as it is, proves nothing against the climate of America, in general, much less against that of Mexico. There being some lands in America, in which, on account of their heat, their humidity, or want of inhabitants, large insects are found, and excessively multiplied, will prove at most, that in some places the surface of the earth is infected, as he says, with putrefaction; but not that the soil of Mexico, or that of all America, is stinking, uncultivated, vitiated, and abandoned to itself. If such a deduction were just, M. de Pauw might also say, that the soil of the Old-Continent is barren, and fetid; as in many countries of it there are prodigious multitudes of monstrous insects, noxious reptiles, and vile animals, as in the Philippine-Isles, in many of those of the Indian-Archipelago, in several countries of the south of Asia, in many of Africa, and even in some of Europe. The Philippine-Isles are infested with enormous ants, and monstrous butterflies; Japan with scorpions; south of Asia and Africa with serpents; Egypt with asps; Guinea and Ethiopia with armies of ants; Holland with field-rats; Ukrania with toads, as M. de Pauw

C

himself

himself affirms. In Italy, the Campagna di Roma (although peopled for so many ages), is infested with vipers; Calabria with tarantulas; the shores of the Adriatic sea with clouds of gnats; and even in France, the population of which is so great, and so ancient, whose lands are so well cultivated, and whose climate is so celebrated by the French, there appeared, a few years ago, according to M. Buffon, a new species of field-mice, larger than the common kind, called by him *Surmulots*, which have multiplied exceedingly, to the great damage of the fields. M. Bazin, in his Compendium of the History of insects, numbers 77 species of bugs, which are all found in Paris, and in its neighbourhood. That large capital, as Mr Bomare says, swarms with those disgusting insects. It is true that there are places in America, where the multitude of insects, and filthy vermin, make life irksome; but we do not know that they have arrived to such excess of multiplication as to depopulate any place, at least there cannot be so many examples produced of this cause of depopulation in the New as in the Old continent, which are attested by Theophrastus, Varro, Pliny, and other authors. The frogs depopulated one place in Gaul, and the locusts another in Africa. One of the Cyclades was depopulated by mice; Amiclas, near to Taracina, by serpents; another place near to Ethiopia, by scorpions and poisonous ants; and another by scolopendras; and, not so distant from our own times, the Mauritius was going to have been abandoned, on account of the extraordinary multiplication of rats, as we can remember to have read in a French author.

With

With respect to the size of the insects, reptiles, and such animals, M. de Pauw makes use of the testimony of M. Dumont, who, in his *Memoirs on Louisiana*, says, that the frogs are so large there that they weigh 37 French pounds, and that their horrid croaking imitates the bellowing of cows. But, M. de Pauw himself says (in his answer to Don Pernetty, cap. 17), that all those who have written about Louisiana, from Henepin, Le Clerc, and Tonti, to Dumont, have contradicted each other, sometimes on one, and sometimes on another, subject. In fact, neither in the old or the new continent are there frogs of 37 pounds in weight; but there are in Asia, and in Africa, serpents, butterflies, ants, and other animals of such monstrous size, that they exceed all those which have been discovered in the New-World. We know very well, that an American historian says, that a certain gigantic species of serpents is to be found in the woods, which attract men with their breath, and swallow them up; but we know also, that several historians, both ancient and modern, report the same extravagant and incredible thing of the serpents of Asia, and even something more. Megasthenes, cited by Pliny, said, that there were serpents found in Asia, so large, that they swallowed entire stags and bulls. Metrodorus, cited by the same author, affirms, that in Asia there were serpents which, by their breath, attracted birds, however high they were, or quick their flight. Among the moderns, Gemelli, in Vol. V. of his *Giro del Mondo*, when he treats of the animals of the Philippine-Isles, speaks thus: "There are serpents in these islands of immoderate size: there

is one called *Ibitin*, very long, which suspending itself by the tale from the trunk of a tree, waits till stags, bears, and also men pass by, in order to attract them with its breath, and devour them at once entirely:” from whence it is evident, that this very ancient fable has been common to both continents.

Further, it may be asked, In what country of America could M. de Pauw find ants to equal those of the Philippine-Islands, called *Sulum*, respecting which Hernandez affirms, that they are six fingers broad in length, and one in breadth? Who has ever seen in America butterflies so large as those of Bourbon, Ternate, the Philippine-isles, and all the Indian-Archipelago? The largest bat of America (native to hot shady countries), which is that called by Buffon *Vampiro*, is, according to him, of the size of a pigeon. *La Rougette*, one of the species of Asia, is as large as a raven; and the *Roufette*, another species of Asia, is as big as a large hen. Its wings, when extended, measure from tip to tip three Parisian feet, and, according to Gemelli, who measured it in the Philippine-isles, six palms. M. Buffon acknowledges the excess in size of the Asiatic bat over the American species, but denies it as to number. Gemelli says, that those of the island of Luzon were so numerous that they darkened the air, and that the noise which they made with their teeth, in eating the fruits of the woods, was heard at the distance of two miles. M. de Pauw says, in talking of serpents, “it cannot be affirmed that the new world has shown any serpents larger than those which Mr Adanson saw in the desarts of Africa.” The greatest serpent found

found in Mexico, after a diligent search made by Hernandez, was 18 feet long: but this is not to be compared with that of the Moluccas, which Bomare says is 33 feet in length; nor with the *Anacandaja*, of Ceylon, which the same author says is more than 33 feet long; nor with others of Asia and Africa, mentioned by the same author. Lastly, the argument drawn from the multitude and size of the American insects is fully as weighty as the argument drawn from the smallness and scarcity of quadrupeds, and both detect the same ignorance, or rather the same voluntary and studied forgetfulness, of the things of the Old continent.

With respect to what M. de Pauw has said of the tribute of lice, in Mexico; in that, as well as in many other things, he discovers his ridiculous credulity. It is true that Cortes found bags of lice in the magazines of the palace of king Axajacatl. It is also true, that Montezuma imposed such a tribute, not on all his subjects, however, but only on those who were beggars; not on account of the extraordinary multitude of those insects, as M. de Pauw affirms, but because Montezuma, who could not suffer idleness in his subjects, resolved that that miserable set of people, who could not labour, should at least be occupied in lousing themselves. This was the true reason of such an extraordinary tribute, as Torquemada, Betancourt, and other early historians relate; and nobody ever before thought of that which M. de Pauw affirms, merely because it suited his preposterous system. Those disgusting insects possibly abound as much in the hair and clothes of American beggars, as of any poor

and uncleanly low people in the world : but there is not a doubt, that if any sovereign of Europe was to exact such a tribute from the poor in his dominions, not only bags, but great vessels might be filled with them.

CHAP. II.

General Description of the Natives—their peculiarities of Ornament and Dress—remarkable Insensibility to Pain, and to the Inclemencies of Weather—terrible Trials undergone by their Chiefs.

IT is now time to turn our attention to the *Aborigines*, or natives, of the New-World. At the time when this great continent was made more generally known to the Europeans by the discoveries of Christopher Columbus, and of the illustrious navigators who imbibed the spirit and enthusiasm of that great man, it was found inhabited by various tribes and nations of men, who differed, in many respects, from most of the people in the three other quarters of the world. In their physical history, however, the greatest peculiarity in the Americans is their complexion, and the little difference which is observed, in this respect, throughout the whole extent of the American continent. In Europe, and in Asia, the people who inhabit the northern countries are of a fairer complexion than those who dwell more to the southward. In the torrid zone, both in Africa and in Asia, the natives are entirely

tirely black, or the next thing to it. This, however, must be understood with some limitation. The people of Lapland, who inhabit the most northerly part of Europe, are by no means so fair as the inhabitants of Britain; nor are the Tartars so fair as the inhabitants of Europe, who lie under the same parallels of latitude. Nevertheless, a Laplander is fair, when compared with an Abyssinian, and a Tartar if compared with a native of the Molucca islands.—In America, this distinction of colour was not so distinctly, and so prominently, marked. In the torrid zone there were no negroes, and in the temperate and frigid zones there were no white people. Most of them were of a kind of red copper-colour, which Mr Forster observed, in the Pesserais, of Tierra del Fuego, to have something of a gloss resembling that metal. It does not appear, however, that this matter has, hitherto, been inquired into with sufficient accuracy. The inhabitants of the inland parts of South-America, where that continent is widest, and, consequently, the influence of the sun most powerful, have never been accurately compared with those of Canada, or more northerly parts, at least as far as we know. Yet this ought to have been done, and that in many instances, too, before it could be asserted so positively, as most authors do, that *there is not the least difference of complexion among the natives of America*. Indeed, so many systems have been formed concerning these singular people, that it is very difficult to obtain a true knowledge of the most simple facts, even from the best and most unprejudiced writers.—If we may believe the Abbé Raynal, the Californians are swarthier than
than

than the Mexicans ; and so positive is he in this opinion, that he gives a reason for it. “ This difference of colour,” says he, “ proves, that the civilized life of society subverts, or totally changes, the order and laws of nature, since we find, under the temperate zone, a savage people that are blacker than the civilized nations of the torrid zone.—On the other hand, Dr Robertson classes all the inhabitants of Spanish America together with regard to colour, whether they are civilized or uncivilized ; and when he speaks of California, takes no notice of any peculiarity in their colour more than others.—The general appearance of the indigenous Americans in various districts, is thus described by the chevalier Pinto : “ They are all of a copper colour, with some diversity of shade, not in proportion to their distance from the Equator, but according to the degree of elevation of the territory in which they reside. Those who live in a high country are fairer than those in the marshy low lands on the coast. Their face is round ; farther removed, perhaps, than that of any people from an oval shape. Their fore-head is small ; the extremity of their ears far from the face ; their lips thick ; their nose flat ; their eyes black, or of a chestnut colour, small but capable of discerning objects at a great distance. Their hair is always thick and sleek, and without any tendency of curl. At the first aspect, a South-American appears to be mild and innocent ; but, on a more attentive view, one discovers in his countenance something wild, distrustful, and sullen.”

The following account of the native Americans is given by Don Antonio Ulloa, in his late work
entitled

entitled *Memoires philosophiques, historiques, et physiques, concernant la decouverte de l' Amerique.*

The American Indians are naturally of a colour bordering upon red. Their frequent exposure to the sun and wind changes it to their ordinary dusky hue. The temperature of the air appears to have little or no influence in this respect. There is no perceptible difference in complexion between the inhabitants of the high and those of the low parts of Peru; yet the climates are of an extreme difference. Nay, the Indians who live as far as 40 degrees and upwards south or north of the equator, are not to be distinguished, in point of colour, from those immediately under it.

There is, also a general conformation of features and person, which, more or less, characterizeth them all. Their chief distinctions, in these respects, are a small forehead, partly covered with hair to the eye-brows, little eyes, the nose thin, pointed, and bent towards the upper lip; a broad face, large ears, black, thick, and lank hair; the legs well formed, the feet small, the body thick and muscular; little or no beard on the face, and that little never extending beyond a small part of the chin and upper lip. It may easily be supposed that this general description cannot apply, in all its parts, to every individual; but all of them partake so much of it, that they may be easily distinguished even from the mulattoes, who come nearest to them in point of colour.

The resemblance among all the American tribes is not less remarkable in respect to their genius, character, manners, and particular customs. The most

most distant tribes are, in these respects, as similar as though they formed but one nation.

All the Indian nations have a peculiar pleasure in painting their bodies of a red colour, with a certain species of earth. The mine of Guanacavelica was formerly of no other use than to supply them with this material for dyeing their bodies; and the cinnabar extracted from it was applied entirely to this purpose. The tribes in Louisiana and in Canada have the same passion; hence minium is the commodity most in demand there.

It may, perhaps, seem singular, that these nations, whose natural colour is red, should affect the same colour as an artificial ornament. But, it may be observed, they do nothing in this respect but what corresponds to the practice of Europeans, who also study to heighten and display to advantage the natural red and white of their complexions. The Indians of Peru have now, indeed, abandoned the custom of painting their bodies: but it was common among them before they were conquered by the Spaniards; and it still remains the custom of all those tribes who have preserved their liberty. The northern nations of America, besides the red colour which is predominant, employ also black, white, blue, and green, in painting their bodies.

The adjustment of these colours is a matter of as great consideration with the Indians of Louisiana and the vast regions extending to the north, as the ornaments of dress among the most polished nations. The business itself they call *Mañaber*, and they do not fail to apply all their talents and assiduity to accomplish it in the most finished manner. No lady of the greatest fashion ever consulted

consulted her mirror with more anxiety, than the Indians do while painting their bodies. The colours are applied with the utmost accuracy and address. Upon the eye-lids, precisely at the root of the eye-lashes, they draw two lines, as fine as the smallest thread; the same upon the lips, the openings of the nostrils, the eye-brows, and the ears; of which last they even follow all the inflexions and sinuosities. As to the rest of the face, they distribute various figures, in all which the red predominates, and the other colours are assorted so as to throw it out to the best advantage. The neck also receives its proper ornaments; a thick coat of vermilion commonly distinguishes the cheeks. Five or six hours are requisite for accomplishing all this with the nicety which they affect. As their first attempts do not always succeed to their wish, they efface them, and begin a-new upon a better plan. No coquette is more fastidious in her choice of ornament, none more vain when the important adjustment is finished. Their delight and self-satisfaction are then so great, that the mirror is hardly ever laid down. An Indian, *Maſtached* to his mind, is the vainest of all the human species. The other parts of the body are left in their natural state, and, excepting what is called a *cachecul*, they go entirely naked.

Such of them as have made themselves eminent for bravery, or other qualifications, are distinguished by figures painted on their bodies. They introduce the colours by making punctures on their skin, and the extent of surface which this ornament covers is proportioned to the exploits they have performed. Some paint only their
arms,

arms, others both their arms and legs; others, again, their thighs, while those who have attained the summit of warlike renown have their bodies painted from the waist upwards. This is the heraldry of the Indians; the devices of which are, probably, more exactly adjusted to the merits of the persons who bear them, than those of more civilized countries.

Besides these ornaments, the warriors also carry plumes of feathers on their heads, their arms, and ancles. These, likewise, are tokens of valour, and none but such as have been thus distinguished may wear them.

The propensity to indolence is equal among all the tribes of Indians, civilized, or savage. The only employment of those who have preserved their independence is hunting and fishing. In some districts, the women exercise a little agriculture, in raising Indian corn, and pumpions, of which they form a species of aliment, by bruising them together: they, also, prepare the ordinary beverage in use among them, taking care, at the same time, of the children, of whom the fathers take no charge.

The female Indians of all the conquered regions of South-America practise what is called the *urcu* (a word which among them signifies *elevation*). It consists in throwing forward the hair from the crown of the head, upon the brow, and cutting it round from the ears to above the eye; so that the forehead and eye-brows are entirely covered. The same custom takes place in the Northern countries. The female inhabitants of both regions tie the rest of their hair behind, so exactly in the same fashion, that it might be supposed

supposed the effect of mutual imitation. This, however, being impossible, from the vast distance that separates them, is thought to countenance the supposition of the whole of America being originally planted with one race of people.

This custom does not take place among the males. Those of the higher parts of Peru wear long and flowing hair, which they reckon a great ornament. In the lower parts of the same country they cut it short, on account of the heat of the climate, a circumstance in which they imitate the Spaniards. The inhabitants of Louisiana pluck out their hair by the root, from the crown of the head forwards, in order to obtain a large forehead, otherwise denied them by nature. The rest of their hair they cut as short as possible, to prevent their enemies from seizing them by it in battle, and also to prevent them from easily getting their scalp, should they fall into their hands as prisoners.

According to Don Ulloa, the whole race of the American Indians is distinguished by an uncommon thickness of skin, and by a hardness of their fibres; circumstances these, which, in the opinion of this learned Spanish writer, contribute to that insensibility to bodily pain, for which these singular people are so remarkable. Our author adduces an instance, in support of this insensibility, in the Americans, in the case of an Indian, who was under the necessity of submitting to be cut for the stone. This operation, it is well known, seldom lasts above four, or five, minutes. Unfavourable circumstances, in his case, prolonged it to the uncommon period of 27 minutes. Yet, all this time, the patient

D

gave

gave no tokens of the extreme pain, commonly attending this operation: he complained only as a person does who feels some slight uneasiness. At last, the stone was extracted. Two days after, he expressed a desire for food, and on the eighth day from the operation he quitted his bed, free from pain, although the wound was not yet thoroughly closed. The same want of sensibility, he says, is observed in cases of fractures, wounds, and other accidents, of a similar nature. In all these cases, their cure is easily effected, and they seem to suffer less present pain than any other race of men. The skulls, which have been taken up in their ancient burying-grounds, are of a greater thickness than that compages of bones is commonly found to be; being from six to seven lines from the outer to the inner superficies.

It is natural to infer from hence, says Ulloa, that their comparative insensibility to pain is owing to a coarser and stronger organization, than that of other nations. The ease with which they endure the severities of climate is, he thinks, another proof of this. The inhabitants of the higher parts of Peru live amidst perpetual frost and snow. Although their clothing is very slight, they support this inclement temperature, without the least inconvenience. Habit, it is to be confessed, may contribute a good deal to this, but much also is to be ascribed to the compact texture of their skin, which defends them from the impression of cold through their pores. We must confess, however, notwithstanding the assertions and conjectures of an author so respectable as Don Ulloa, that we are not very confident, that either the skins, or the skulls of the
Americans

Americans are thicker than the skins and skulls of many other nations of mankind. But we do not wish, in this place, to expatiate on this subject, which can only be reduced to certainty by the investigations of the anatomist, or naturalist.

The Northern Indians resemble them in this respect. The utmost rigours of the winter season do not prevent them from following the chase almost naked. It is true, they wear a kind of woollen cloak, or sometimes the skin of a wild beast, upon their shoulders; but, besides that it covers only a small part of their body, it would appear that they use it rather for ornament than warmth. In fact, they wear it indiscriminately, in the severities of winter, and in the sultriest heats of summer, when neither Europeans nor Negroes can suffer any but the slightest clothing. They even frequently throw aside this cloak when they go a-hunting, that it may not embarrass them, in traversing their forests, where, they say, the thorns and undergrowth would take hold of it; while, on the contrary, they slide smoothly over the surface of their naked bodies. At all times, they go with their heads uncovered, without suffering the least inconvenience, either from the cold, or from those *coups de soleil*, which in Louisiana are so often fatal to the inhabitants of other climates.

The Indians of South-America distinguish themselves by modern dresses, in which they affect various tastes. Those of the high country, and of the valleys in Peru, dress partly in the Spanish fashion. Instead of hats they wear bonnets of coarse double cloth, the weight of

which neither seems to incommode them when they go to warmer climates, nor does the accidental want of them seem to be felt in situations where the most piercing cold reigns. Their legs and feet are always bare, if we except a sort of sandals, made of the skins of oxen. The inhabitants of South-America, compared with those of North-America, are described as generally more feeble in their frame; less vigorous in the efforts of their mind; of gentler dispositions, more addicted to pleasure, and sunk in indolence. — This, however, is not universally the case. Many of their nations are as intrepid and enterprising as any others on the whole continent. Among the tribes on the banks of the Orinoko, if a warrior aspires to the post of captain, his probation begins with a long fast, more rigid than any ever observed by the most abstemious hermit. At the close of this the chiefs assemble; and each gives him three lashes with a large whip, applied so vigorously, that his body is almost flayed. If he betrays the least symptom of impatience, or even of sensibility, he is disgraced, for ever, and is rejected, as unworthy of the honour. After some interval, his constancy is proved by a more excruciating trial. He is laid in his hammock with his hands bound fast; and an innumerable multitude of venomous ants, whose bite occasions a violent pain and inflammation, are thrown upon him. The judges of his merit stand around the hammock; and whilst these cruel insects fasten upon the most sensible parts of his body, a sigh, a groan, or an involuntary motion, expressive of what he suffers, would exclude him from the dignity of
which

which he is ambitious. Even after this evidence, his fortitude is not deemed to be sufficiently ascertained, till he has stood another test, more severe, if possible, than the former. He is again suspended in his hammock, and covered with the leaves of the palmetto. A fire of stinking herbs is kindled underneath, so as he may feel its heat, and be involved in smoke. Though scorched and almost suffocated, he must continue to endure this with the same patient insensibility. Many perish in this essay of their firmness and courage; but such as go through it with applause, receive the ensigns of their new dignity with much solemnity, and are ever after regarded as leaders of approved resolution, whose behaviour, in the most trying situations, will do honour to their country. In North-America, the previous trial of a warrior is neither so formal, nor so severe; though, even there, before a youth is permitted to bear arms, his patience and fortitude are proved by blows, by fire, and by insults, more intolerable to a haughty spirit than either.

C H A P. III.

Customs and Manners of the Aborigines of North-America, more particularly—their Pensiveness and Taciturnity—Form of Government—Public Assemblies—Wampums, or Belts.

OF the manners and customs of the North-Americans more particularly, the following is the most consistent account that can be collected from the best informed and most impartial writers.

When the Europeans first arrived in America, they found the Indians quite naked, except those parts which even the most uncultivated people usually conceal. Since that time, however, they generally use a coarse blanket, which they buy of the neighbouring planters.

Their huts, or cabbins, are made of stakes of wood driven into the ground, and covered with branches of trees, or reeds. They lie on the floor, either on mats, or the skins of wild beasts. Their dishes are of timber; but their spoons are made of the skulls of wild oxen, and their knives of flint. A kettle and a large plate constitute almost the whole utensils of the family.—Their diet consists chiefly in what they procure by hunting; and saganite, or pottage, is likewise one of their most common kinds of food. The most honourable furniture amongst them is a collection of the scalps of their enemies; with these they ornament their huts, which are esteemed in proportion to the number of this sort of spoils.

The

The character of the Indians is altogether founded upon their circumstances and way of life. A people who are constantly employed in procuring the means of a precarious subsistence, who live by hunting the wild animals, and who are generally engaged in war with their neighbours, cannot be supposed to enjoy much gaiety of temper, or a high flow of spirits. The Indians, therefore, are in general grave, even to sadness: they have nothing of that giddy vivacity peculiar to some nations of Europe, and they despise it. Their behaviour to those about them is regular, modest, and respectful. Ignorant of the arts of amusement, of which that of saying trifles agreeably is one of the most considerable, they seldom speak but when they have something important to observe; and all their actions, words, and even looks, are attended with some meaning. This is extremely natural to men who are almost continually engaged in pursuits, which to them are of the highest importance. Their subsistence depends entirely on what they procure with their hands; and, their lives, their honour, and every thing dear to them, may be lost by the smallest inattention to the designs of their enemies. As they have no particular object to attach them to one place rather than another, they go wherever they expect to find the necessaries of life in greatest abundance. Cities, which are the effects of agriculture and arts, they have none. The different tribes, or nations, are, for the same reason, extremely small, when compared with civilized societies, in which industry, arts, agriculture, and commerce, have united a vast number of individuals, whom a complicated lux-
ury

ury renders useful to one another. These small tribes live at an immense distance; they are separated by a desert frontier, and hid in the bosom of impenetrable and almost boundless forests.

There is established in each society a certain species of government, which prevails over the whole continent of America, with exceeding little variation; because over the whole of this continent the manners and way of life are nearly similar and uniform. Without arts, riches, or luxury, the great instruments of subjection in polished societies, an American has no method by which he can render himself considerable among his companions, but by superiority in personal qualities of body or mind. But, as Nature has not been very lavish in her personal distinctions, where all enjoy the same education, all are pretty much upon an equality, and will desire to remain so. Liberty, therefore, is the prevailing passion of the Americans: and their government, under the influence of this sentiment, is, perhaps, better secured than by the wisest political regulations. They are very far, however, from despising all sort of authority: they are attentive to the voice of wisdom, which experience has conferred on the aged, and they enlist under the banners of the chief in whose valour and military address they have learned to repose a just and merited confidence. In every society, therefore, there is to be considered the power of the chiefs and of the elders. Among those tribes which are most engaged in war, the power of the chief is, naturally, predominant; because the idea of having a military leader was the first source of his superiority, and the continual exigencies

gencies of the state requiring such a leader, will continue to support, and even to enhance it. His power, however, is rather persuasive than coercive; he is revered as a father, rather than feared as a monarch. He has no guards, no prisons, no officers of justice, and one act of ill-judged violence would pull him from his humble throne. The elders in the other form of government which may be considered as a *mild* and *nominal* aristocracy, have no more power. In most countries, therefore, age alone is sufficient for acquiring respect, influence, and authority. It is age which teaches experience, and experience is the only source of knowledge among a savage people. Among those persons business is conducted with the utmost simplicity, and which may recal, to those who are acquainted with antiquity, a picture of the most early ages. The heads of families meet together in a house or cabin appointed for the purpose. Here the business is discussed; and here those of the nation, distinguished for their eloquence or wisdom, have an opportunity of displaying those talents. Their orators, like those of Homer, express themselves in a bold figurative style, stronger than refined, or rather softened, nations can well bear, and with gestures equally violent, but often extremely natural and expressive. When the business is over, and they happen to be well provided with food, they appoint a feast upon the occasion, of which almost the whole nation partakes. The feast is accompanied with a song, in which the real or fabulous exploits of their forefathers are celebrated. They have dances too, though like those of the Greeks and Romans, they are chiefly
of

of the military kind ; and their music and dancing accompany every feast.

To assist their memory, they have belts of small shells, or beads, of different colours, each representing a particular object, which is marked by their colour and arrangement. At the conclusion of every subject on which they discourse, when they treat with a foreign state, they deliver one of those belts ; for if this ceremony should be omitted, all that they have said passes for nothing. These belts are carefully deposited in each town, as the public records of the nation ; and to them they occasionally have recourse, when any public contest happens with a neighbouring tribe. Of late, as the materials of which those belts are made, have become scarce, they often give some skin in place of the wampum (the name of the beads), and receive, in return, presents of a more valuable kind from the commissioners ; for they never consider a treaty as of any weight, unless every article in it be ratified by such a gratification.

It often happens, that those different tribes or nations, scattered as they are at an immense distance from one another, meet in their excursions after prey. If there subsists no animosity between them, which seldom is the case, they behave in the most friendly and courteous manner : but if they happen to be in a state of war, or if there has been no previous intercourse between them, all who are not friends are deemed enemies, and they fight with the most savage fury.

C H A P. IV.

Customs, &c. of the Natives, continued.—Their Wars—Ceremonies at setting out—Ensigns—Military Habits—Quickness of their senses—Vigilance and Circumspection—Manner of Fighting—Treatment of Prisoners—Tortures—Constancy of the Sufferers—Surprising Contrast in the American Character.

IF we except hunting and fishing, war is the principal employment of the Indian men: almost every other concern, but in particular the little agriculture which they enjoy, is configned to the women. The most common motive of the Americans for entering into war, when it does not arise from an accidental rencounter, or interference, is either to revenge themselves for the death of some lost friends, or to acquire prisoners, who may assist them in their hunting, and whom they adopt into their society. These wars are either undertaken by some private adventurers, or at the instance of the whole community. In the latter case, all the young men who are disposed to go out to battle (for no one is compelled contrary to his inclination), give a bit of wood to the chief, as a token of their design to accompany him; for every thing among these people is transacted with a great deal of ceremony and with many forms. The chief, who is to conduct them, fasts several days, during which time he converses with no one, and is particularly careful to observe his dreams; which the presumption natural to savages generally

rally

rally renders as favourable as he could desire. A variety of other superstitions and ceremonies are observed. One of the most hideous is setting the war-kettle on the fire, as an emblem that they are going out to devour their enemies; which, among these nations, it is probable, was formerly the case, since they still continue to express it in clear terms, and use an emblem significant of the ancient usage. Then, they dispatch a porcelane, or large shell, to their allies, inviting them to come along, and drink the blood of their enemies. For with the Americans, as with the Greeks of old.

“ A generous friendship no cold medium knows;
 “ But with one love, with one resentment glows.”

They think that those in their alliance must not only adopt their enmities, but that they must also have their resentment wound up to the same pitch with themselves. And, indeed, no people carry their friendships or their resentments so far as they do; and this is what should be expected from their peculiar circumstances: that principle in human nature which is the spring of the social affections, acts with so much the greater force the more it is restrained. The Americans, who live in small societies, who see few objects and few persons, become wonderfully attached to those objects and persons, and cannot be deprived of them without feeling themselves miserable. Their ideas are too confined to enable them to entertain just sentiments of humanity, or universal benevolence. But this very circumstance, while it makes them cruel and savage to an incredible degree, towards those with whom they

are

are at war, adds a new force to their particular friendships, and to the common tie which unites the members of the same tribe, or of those different tribes which are in alliance with one another. Without attending to this reflection, some facts we are going to relate would excite our wonder without informing our reason, and we would be bewildered in a number of particulars, seemingly opposite to one another, without being sensible of the general cause from which they proceed.

Having finished all the ceremonies previous to the war, and the day appointed for their setting out on the expedition being arrived, they take leave of their friends, and exchange their clothes, or whatever moveables they have, in token of mutual friendship; after which they proceed from the town, their wives and female relations walking before, and attending them to some distance. The warriors march all dressed in their finest apparel and most showy ornaments, without any order. The chief walks slowly before them, singing the war-song, while the rest observe the most profound silence. When they come up to their women, they deliver them all their finery, and putting on their worst clothes, proceed on their expedition.

Every nation has its peculiar ensign or standard, which is generally a representation of some beast, bird, or fish. Those among the Five-Nations are the bear, otter, wolf, tortoise, and eagle; and by those names the tribes are usually distinguished. They have the figures of those animals pricked and printed on several parts of
E their

their bodies ; and when they march through the woods, they commonly, at every encampment, cut the representation of their ensign on trees, especially after a successful campaign ; marking at the same time the number of scalps or prisoners they have taken. Their military dress is extremely singular. They cut off, or pull out, all their hair, except a spot about the breadth of two English crown-pieces, near the top of their heads, and entirely destroy their eye-brows. The lock left upon their heads is divided into several parcels, each of which is stiffened and adorned with wampum, beads, and feathers of various kinds, the whole being twisted into a form much resembling the modern pompoon. Their heads are painted red down to the eye-brows, and sprinkled over with white down. The gristles of their ears are split almost quite round, and distended with wires or splinters, so as to meet and tie together on the nape of the neck. These are, also, hung with ornaments, and generally, bear the representation of some bird, or beast. Their noses are likewise bored and hung with trinkets of beads, and their faces painted, with various colours, so as to make an awful appearance. Their breasts are adorned with a gorget, or medal, of brass, copper, or some other metal ; and that dreadful weapon the scalping-knife hangs by a string from the neck.

The great qualities of an Indian war are vigilance and attention, to give and avoid a surprise ; and, indeed, in these they are superior to all nations, in the world. Accustomed to continual wandering in the forests ; having their perceptions sharpened by keen necessity, and living, in every

every respect, according to nature, their external senses have a degree of acuteness which, at first view, appears incredible. They can trace out their enemies, at an immense distance, by the smoke of their fires, which they smell, and by the tracks of their feet upon the ground, imperceptible to an European eye, but which they can count and distinguish, with the utmost facility. It is said, they can even distinguish the different nations with whom they are acquainted, and can determine the precise time when they passed, where an European could not, with all his glasses, distinguish footsteps at all. These circumstances, however, are of less importance, because their savage enemies are equally well acquainted with them. When they go out, therefore, they take care to avoid making use of any thing by which they might run the danger of a discovery. They light no fire to warm themselves, or to prepare their victuals: they lie close to the ground all day, and travel only in the night; and marching along in files, he that closes the rear, diligently covers with leaves the tracks of his own feet and of theirs who preceded him. When they halt to refresh themselves, scouts are sent out to reconnoitre the country and beat up every place where they suspect an enemy to lie concealed. In this manner they enter unawares the villages of their foes; and while the flower of the nation are engaged in hunting, massacre all the children, women, and helpless old men, or make prisoners of as many as they can manage, or have strength enough to be useful to their nation. But when the enemy is apprised

of their design, and coming on in arms against them, they throw themselves flat on the ground among the withered herbs and leaves, which their faces are painted to resemble. They then allow a part to pass unmolested, when, all at once, with a tremendous shout, rising up from their ambush, they pour a storm of musket-bullets on their foes. The party attacked returns the same cry. Every one shelters himself with a tree, and returns the fire of the adverse party, as soon as they raise themselves from the ground to give a second fire. Thus does the battle continue until the one party is so much weakened as to be incapable of farther resistance. But if the force on each side continues nearly equal, the fierce spirits of the savages, inflamed by the loss of their friends, can no longer be restrained. They abandon their distant war, they rush upon one another, with clubs and hatchets in their hands, magnifying their own courage, and insulting their enemies with the bitterest reproaches. A cruel combat ensues, death appears in a thousand hideous forms, which would congeal the blood of civilized nations to behold, but which rouses the fury of savages. They trample, they insult, over the dead bodies, and tear the scalp from the head. The flame rages on till it meets with no resistance; then the prisoners are secured, those unhappy men, whose fate is a thousand times more dreadful than theirs who have died in the field. The conquerors set up a hideous howling, to lament the friends they have lost. They approach, in a melancholy and severe gloom, to their own village; a messenger is

is sent to announce their arrival, and the women, with frightful shrieks, come out to mourn their dead brothers, or their husbands. When they are arrived, the chief relates, in a low voice, to the elders, a circumstantial account of every particular of the expedition. The orator proclaims aloud this account to the people; and as he mentions the names of those who have fallen, the shrieks of the women are redoubled. The men, too, join in these cries, according as each is most connected with the deceased by blood, or friendship. The last ceremony is the proclamation of the victory; each individual then forgets his private misfortunes, and joins in the triumph of his nation; all tears are wiped from their eyes, and, by an unaccountable transition, they pass, in a moment, from the bitterness of sorrow to an extravagance of joy. But the treatment of the prisoners, whose fate remains all this time undecided, is what chiefly characterises the savages.

We have already mentioned the strength of their affections, or resentments. United, as they are, in small societies, connected, within themselves, by the firmest ties, their friendly affections, which glow with the most intense warmth within the walls of their own village, seldom extend beyond them. They feel nothing for the enemies of their nation; and their resentment is easily extended, from the individual who has injured them, to all others of the same tribe. The prisoners who have themselves the same feelings, know the intentions of their conquerors, and are prepared for them. The person who

has taken the captive attends him to the cottage, where, according to the distribution made by the elders, he is to be delivered to supply the loss of a citizen. If those who receive him have their family weakened by war or other accidents, they adopt the captive into the family, of which he becomes a member. But if they have no occasion for him, or their resentment for the loss of their friends be too high to endure the sight of any connected with those who were concerned in it, they sentence him to death. All those who have met with the same severe sentence being collected, the whole nation is assembled at the execution, as for some great solemnity. A scaffold is erected, and the prisoners are tied to the stake, where they commence their death-song, and prepare for the ensuing scene of cruelty with the most undaunted courage. Their enemies, on the other side, are determined to put it to the proof, by the most refined and exquisite tortures. They begin at the extremity of his body, and, gradually, approach the more vital parts. One plucks out his nails by the roots, one by one; another takes a finger into his mouth, and tears off the flesh with his teeth; a third thrusts the finger, mangled as it is, into the bowl of a pipe made red-hot, which he smokes like tobacco; then they pound his toes and fingers to pieces between two stones; they cut circles about his joints, and gashes in the fleshy parts of his limbs, which they sear immediately with red-hot irons, cutting, burning, and pinching them, alternately; they pull off his flesh, thus mangled and roasted, bit by bit, devouring it with greediness,

ness, and smearing their faces with the blood, in an enthusiasm of horror and fury. When they have thus torn off the flesh, they twist the bare nerves and tendons about an iron, tearing and snapping them, whilst others are employed in pulling and extending his limbs in every way that can increase the torment. This continues, often, five or six hours; and sometimes, such is the strength of the savages, days together. Then they frequently unbind him, to give a breathing to their fury, to think what new torments they shall inflict, and to refresh the strength of the sufferer, who, wearied out with such a variety of unheard-of torments, often falls into so profound a sleep, that they are obliged to apply the fire to awake him, and renew his sufferings. He is again fastened to the stake, and again they renew their cruelty; they stick him all over with small matches of wood that easily takes fire, but burns slowly; they continually run sharp reeds into every part of his body; they drag out his teeth with pincers, and thrust out his eyes; and, lastly, after having burned his flesh from the bones with slow fires; after having so mangled the body that it is all but one wound; after having mutilated his face in such a manner as to carry nothing human in it; after having peeled the skin from the head, and poured a heap of red-hot coals or boiling water on the naked skull—they once more unbind the wretch; who, blind, and staggering with pain and weakness, assaulted and pelted on every side with clubs and stones, now up, now down, falling into their fires at every step, runs hither and thither,

thither, until one of the chiefs, whether out of compassion, or weary of cruelty, puts an end to his life with a club or dagger. The body is then put into a kettle, and this barbarous employment is succeeded by a feast as barbarous.

The women, forgetting the human as well as the female nature, and transformed into something worse than furies, are said to surpass even the men in this scene of horror; while the principal persons of the country sit round the stake, smoking and looking on, without the least emotion. What is most extraordinary, the sufferer himself, in the little intervals of his torments, smokes too, appears unconcerned, and converses with his torturers about indifferent matters. Indeed, during the whole time of his execution, there seems a contest which shall exceed, they in inflicting the most horrid pains, or he in enduring them with a firmness and constancy almost above human: not a groan, not a sigh, not a distortion of countenance, escapes him: he possesses his mind entirely in the midst of his torments: he recounts his own exploits: he informs them what cruelties he has inflicted upon their countrymen; and threatens them with the revenge that will attend his death; and, though his reproaches exasperate them, to a perfect madness of rage and fury, he continues his insults even of their ignorance of the art of tormenting, pointing out himself more exquisite methods, and more sensible parts of the body to be afflicted. The women have this part of courage as well as the men; and it is as rare for an Indian to behave otherwise as it would be for an European

European to suffer as an Indian. Such is the wonderful power of an early institution, and a ferocious thirst of glory! "I am brave and intrepid (exclaims the savage in the face of his tormentors); I do not fear death, nor any kind of tortures; those who fear them are cowards; they are less than women; life is nothing to those that have courage. May my enemies be confounded with despair and rage! Oh! that I could devour them, and drink their blood to the last drop."

But neither the intrepidity, on one side, nor the inflexibility, on the other, are among themselves matter of astonishment: for vengeance, and fortitude, in the midst of torment, are duties which they consider as sacred; they are the effects of their earliest education, and depend upon principles instilled into them from their infancy. On all other occasions they are humane and compassionate. Nothing can exceed the warmth of their affection towards their friends, who consist of all those who live in the same village, or are in alliance with it: among these all things are common; and this, though it may in part, and among some of the tribes, arise from their not possessing very distinct notions of separate property, is chiefly to be attributed to the strength of their attachment: because, in every thing else, with their lives as well as their fortunes, they are ready to serve their friends. Their houses, their provision, even their young women, are not enough to oblige a guest. Has any one of these succeeded ill in his hunting? Has his harvest failed; or is his house burned? He feels no
other

other effect of his misfortunes, than that it gives him an opportunity to experience the benevolence and regard of his fellow-citizens. On the other hand, to the enemies of his country, or to those who have privately offended, the American is implacable. He conceals his sentiments; he appears reconciled until by some treachery or surprise he has an opportunity of executing an horrible revenge. No length of time is sufficient to allay his resentment; no distance of place great enough to protect the object; he crosses the steepest mountains; he pierces the most impracticable forests, and traverses the most hideous bogs and deserts, for several hundreds of miles; bearing the inclemency of the season, the fatigue of the expedition, the extremes of hunger and thirst, with patience and cheerfulness, in hopes of surprising his enemy, on whom he exercises the most shocking barbarities, even to the eating of his flesh. To such extremes do the Indians push their friendship or their enmity; and such indeed, in general, is the character of all strong and uncultivated minds.

C H A P. V.

Customs, &c. of the Natives, continued.—Treatment of their dead Friends—Superstitions—Condition of their Women—Ardent Love of Liberty—Crimes and Punishments—Peculiar Manners of different Nations—Longevity.

BUT what we have said respecting the Indians would be a faint picture, did we omit observing the force of their friendship, which principally appears by the treatment of their dead. When any one of the society is cut off, he is lamented by the whole: on this occasion a variety of ceremonies are practised, denoting the most lively sorrow. No business is transacted, however pressing, till all the pious ceremonies due to the dead are performed. The body is washed, anointed, and painted. Then, the women lament the loss with hideous howlings, intermixed with songs which celebrate the great actions of the deceased and his ancestors. The men mourn also, though in a less extravagant manner. The whole village is present at the interment, and the corpse is habited in their most sumptuous ornaments. Close to the body of the defunct are placed his bows and arrows, with whatever he valued most in his life, and a quantity of provision for his subsistence on the journey which he is supposed to take. This solemnity, like every other, is attended with feasting. The funeral being ended, the relations
of

of the deceased confine themselves to their huts, for a considerable time, to indulge their grief. After an interval of some weeks, they visit the grave, repeat their sorrow, new-clothe the remains of the body, and act over again all the solemnities of the funeral.

Among the various tokens of their regard for their deceased friends, the most remarkable is the ceremony which they call the *feast of the dead*, or the *feast of souls*. The day for this ceremony is appointed in the council of their chiefs, who give orders for every thing which may enable them to celebrate it with pomp and magnificence; and the neighbouring nations are invited to partake of the entertainment. At this time, all who have died since the preceding feast of the kind are taken out of their graves. Even those who have been interred at the greatest distance from the villages, are diligently sought for, and conducted to this rendezvous of the dead, which exhibits a scene of horror beyond the power of description. When the feast is concluded, the bodies are dressed in the finest skins which can be procured, and after being exposed for some time in this pomp, are again committed to the earth, with great solemnity, which is succeeded by funeral games.

Their taste for war, which forms the chief ingredient in their character, gives a strong bias to their religion. *Areskoui*, or the god of battle, is revered as the great god of the Indians. Him they invoke before they go into the field; and according as his disposition is more or less favourable to them, they conclude they will be more or

less successful. Some nations seem to do a kind of homage to the sun, as a symbol, or minister, of the beneficence and power of the *Great Spirit*: others pay a similar homage to the moon and planets; among others, there is a number of traditions, relative to the creation of the world and the history of the gods: traditions which resemble the Grecian fables, but which are still more absurd and inconsistent. But religion is not the prevailing character of the Indians; and except when they have some immediate occasion for the assistance of their gods, they pay them no sort of worship. Like all rude nations, however, they are strongly addicted to superstition. They believe in the existence of a number of good and bad genii, or spirits, who interfere in the affairs of mortals, and produce all our happiness, or misery. It is from the evil genii, in particular, that our diseases, they imagine, proceed; and it is to the good genii we are indebted for a cure. The ministers of the genii are the jugglers, who are also the chief physicians among the savages. These jugglers are supposed to be inspired by the good genii, most commonly in their dreams, with the knowledge of future events: they are called in to the assistance of the sick, and are supposed to be informed by the genii whether they will get over the disease, and in what way they must be treated. But these spirits are extremely simple in their system of physic, and, in almost every disease, direct the juggler to the same remedy. The patient is inclosed in a narrow cabin, in the midst of which is a stone red-hot; on this they throw water, until he is well soaked with the warm vapour and his own

F sweat

sweat. Then they hurry him from this bagnio, and plunge him suddenly into the next river. This coarse method, which costs many their lives, often performs very extraordinary cures. "Some of their remedies, however, which are almost entirely derived from the vegetable kingdom, are certainly very powerful and efficacious, in their operation. The principal of these are a species of *stillingia* (perhaps a *croton*), several species of *iris*, particularly the *versicolor*, and the *verna*; the *bignonia crucigera*, &c."—These are principally employed by the jugglers, and old women; but most of the savages are more or less dextrous in curing wounds, and diseases. But the power of their remedies is generally attributed by the savages to the magical ceremonies with which they are administered.

Although the Indian women generally bear the laborious part of the domestic œconomy, their condition, at least among many of the tribes, is far from being so wretched, so slavish, and depressed, as has been represented, by Dr Robertson, and by many other writers. We do not mean, in this place, to engage in an inquiry concerning the comparative respectability and importance of the female character in the various stages of society and improvement: an inquiry this which has employed the pens of some of the most learned and eloquent writers of the present age, and concerning which there are still various, and very opposite, opinions. This, however, we think, we may, confidently and safely, assert, that the condition of the women among many of the American tribes is as respectable and as important as it was among the Germans, in the
 days

days of Tacitus; or as it is among any other nations, with whom we are acquainted, in a similar stage of improvement. "Their business, or employment," says the ingenious Mr William Bartram, "is chiefly in their houses, except at those seasons when their crops of maize, &c. are growing, at which times they generally turn out with their husbands and parents; but they are by no means compelled to do this, and one seldom sees a third as many females as males at work, in their plantations." "You may depend on my assertion," (says the same gentleman, who had ample opportunities of studying the customs and manners of the southern Indians, of whom he is speaking, in this place) "that there are no people, any where, who love their women more than these Indians do, or men of better understanding in distinguishing the merits of the opposite sex;—or men more faithful in rendering suitable compensation. They are courteous and polite to their women,—gentle, tender and fondling, even to an appearance of effeminacy. An Indian man seldom attempts to use a woman, of any description, with indelicacy, either of action, or of language.

"In the hunting seasons, that is, in Autumn, and in winter, when the men are generally out in the forests, the whole care of the house or family devolves on the women: at these times they are obliged to undergo a great deal of labour and fatigue, such as cutting wood, &c. But this labour is, in part, alleviated by the assistance of the old men, who are past their hunting days, or who are, no longer, capable of serving in
 F 2 war"

war." But nothing more clearly shows the importance and respectability of the women among the Indians than this circumstance, that, among some of the tribes, they are permitted to preside in the councils of their country : to this we may add, that several of the Florida nations have, at different times, been governed by the wisdom, and the prudence of female caciques.

Polygamy is practised by some nations, but it is not general. In most; they content themselves with one wife; but a divorce is admitted of in case of adultery. No nation of the Americans is without a regular marriage, in which there are many ceremonies; the principal of which is, the bride's presenting the bridegroom with a plate of their corn. The women, though before incontinent, are remarkable for chastity after marriage.

Liberty, in its full extent, being the darling passion of the Indians, their education is directed in such a manner as to cherish this disposition to the utmost. Hence children are never upon any account chastised with blows, and they are seldom even reprimanded. Reason, they say, will guide their children when they come to the use of it, and before that time their faults cannot be very great : but blows might damp their free and martial spirit, by the habit of a slavish motive to action. When grown up, they experience nothing like command, dependence, or subordination; even strong persuasion is industriously withheld by those who have influence among them.—No man is held in great esteem, unless he has increased the strength of his country with
a cap-

a captive, or adorned his hut with a scalp of one of his enemies.

Controversies among the Indians are few, and quickly decided. When any criminal matter is so flagrant as to become a national concern, it is brought under the jurisdiction of the great council; but in ordinary cases, the crime is either revenged or compromised by the parties concerned. If a murder be committed, the family which has lost a relation prepares to retaliate on that of the offender. • They often kill the murderer; and when this happens, the kindred of the last person slain, look upon themselves to be as much injured, and to have the same right to vengeance, as the other party. In general, however, the offender absents himself; the friends send compliments of condolence to those of the person who has been murdered. The head of the family, at length, appears with a number of presents, the delivery of which he accompanies with a formal speech. The whole ends, as usual, in mutual feastings, in songs, and in dances. If the murder is committed by one of the same family, or cabin, that cabin has the full right of judgment within itself, either to punish the guilty with death, or to pardon him, or to oblige him to give some recompence to the wife or children of the slain. Instances of such a crime, however, very seldom happen; for their attachment to those of the same family is remarkably strong, and is said to produce such friendships as may vie with the most celebrated in fabulous antiquity.

Such, in general, are the manners and customs of the Indian nations; but almost every tribe has something peculiar to itself. Among the Hurons,

and the Natches, the dignity of the chief is said to be hereditary, and the right of succession in the female line. When this happens to be extinct, the most respectable matron of the tribe, we are informed, makes choice of whom she pleases to succeed.

The Cheerokees are governed by several sachems, or chiefs, elected by the different villages; as are also the Creeks, and the Choctaws. The two latter punish adultery in a woman by cutting off her hair, which they will not suffer to grow till the corn is ripe, the next season; but the Illinois, for the same crime, cut off the women's noses and ears.

The Indians on the Lakes are formed into a sort of empire; and the emperor is elected from the eldest tribe, which is that of the Ottowawas. This authority is very considerable. A few years ago, the person who held this rank formed a design of uniting all the Indian nations, under his sovereignty; but he miscarried in the bold attempt.

In general, the American Indians live to a great age, although it is not easy to know from themselves the exact number of their years. It was asked of an Indian, who appeared to be extremely old, what age he was of? I am above twenty, was his reply. Upon putting the question in a different form, by reminding him of certain circumstances, in former times, my *machu*, said he, spoke to me, when I was young, of the Incas; and he had seen these princes. According to this reply, there must have elapsed, from the date of his *machu's* (his grandfather's) remembrance to that time, a period of, at least,

232 years. The man who made this reply, appeared to be 120 years of age: for, besides the whiteness of his hair and beard, his body was almost bent to the ground; without, however, showing any other marks of debility, or suffering. This happened in 1764. This longevity, attended in general with uninterrupted health, is thought, by some writers, to be the consequence in part of their vacancy from all serious thought and employment, joined also with the robust texture and conformation of their bodily organs. If the Indians did not destroy one another, in their almost perpetual wars, and if their habits of intoxication were not so universal and incurable, they would be, of all the races of men who inhabit the globe, the most likely to extend, not only the bounds, but the enjoyments, of animal life to their utmost duration.

CHAP.

C H A P. VI.

Other Pictures of the Native Americans—Anecdote of an Algonquin Woman.—Reproached with Pusillanimity—Perfidy—Weakness of Understanding—Indolence and Stupidity—Vanity and Conceit—their Eloquence disparaged.

LET us now attend to other pictures which have been given of the aboriginal inhabitants of America. The vices and defects of the American Indians have been, by several writers, most unaccountably aggravated, and every virtue and good quality denied them. Their cruelties have been already described, and accounted for. The following anecdote of an Algonquin Woman we find adduced as a remarkable proof of their innate thirst of blood. That nation being at war with the Iroquois, she happened to be taken prisoner, and was carried to one of the villages belonging to them. Here she was stripped naked, and her hands and feet bound, with ropes, in one of their cabins. In this condition she remained ten days, the savages sleeping round her every night. The eleventh night, while they were asleep, she found means to disengage one of her hands, with which she immediately freed herself from the ropes, and went to the door. Though she had now an opportunity of escaping unperceived, her revengeful temper could not let slip so favourable an opportunity of killing one of her enemies. The attempt was manifestly at the hazard of her own life; yet, snatching

snatching up a hatchet, she killed the savage that lay next her: and, springing out of the cabin, concealed herself in a hollow tree, which she had observed the day before. The groans of the dying person soon alarmed the other savages, and the young ones immediately set out in pursuit of her. Perceiving, from her tree, that they all directed their course one way, and that no savage was near her, she left her sanctuary, and flying by an opposite direction, ran into a forest without being perceived. The second day after this happened, her footsteps were discovered; and they pursued her with such expedition, that the third day she discovered her enemies at her heels. Upon this, she threw herself into a pond of water; and diving among some weeds and bulrushes, she could just breath above water without being perceived. Her pursuers, after making the most diligent search, were forced to return.—For 35 days this woman held on her course through woods and desarts, without any other sustenance than that which roots and wild berries afforded her. When she came to the river St Lawrence, she made, with her own hands, a kind of a wicker raft, on which she crossed it. As she went by the French for Trois-Riviers, without well knowing where she was, she perceived a canoe full of savages; and fearing they might be Iroquois, ran again into the woods, where she remained till sunset.—Continuing her course soon after, she saw Trois-Riviers; and was then discovered by a party whom she knew to be Hurons, a nation in alliance with the Algonquins. She then squatted down, behind a bush, calling out to them that she was not in a
condition

condition to be seen, because she was naked. They immediately threw her a blanket, and then conducted her to a fort, where she recounted her story.

Personal courage has been denied them. In proof of their pusillanimity, the following incidents are quoted from Charlevoix by lord Kames, in his *Sketches of the History of Man*. "The fort de Vercheres, in Canada, belonging to the French, was, in the year 1690, attacked by the Iroquois. They approached silently, preparing to scale the palisade, when some musket-shot made them retire. Advancing a second time, they were again repulsed, wondering that they could discover none but a woman, who was seen every where. This was Madame de Vercheres, who appeared as resolute as if supported by a numerous garrison. The hopes of storming a place without men to defend it, occasioned reiterated attacks. After two days siege they retired, fearing to be intercepted in their retreat. Two years after, a party of the same nation appeared before the fort so unexpectedly, that a girl of fourteen, daughter of the proprietor, had but time to shut the gate. With the young woman there was not a soul but one raw soldier. She showed herself, with her assistant, sometimes in one place, and sometimes in another; changing her dress frequently, in order to give some appearance of a garrison; always firing opportunely. The faint-hearted Iroquois decamped without success."

There is no instance, it is said, either of a single Indian facing an individual, of any other nation, in fair and open combat, or of their
jointly

jointly venturing to try the fate of battle with an equal number of any foes. Even with the greatest superiority of numbers, they dare not meet an open attack. Yet, notwithstanding this want of courage, they are still formidable; nay, it has been known, that a small party of them has routed a much superior body of regular troops: but this can only happen when they have surprised them in the fastnesses of their forests, where the covert of the wood may conceal them until they take their aim with the utmost certainty. After one such discharge they immediately retreat, without leaving the smallest trace of their route. It may easily be supposed, that an onset of this kind must produce confusion even among the steadiest troops, when they can neither know the number of their enemies, nor perceive the place where they lie in ambush.

Perfidy combined with cruelty has been also made a part of their character. Don Ulloa relates, That the Indians called *Natches*, in Louisiana, laid a plot of massacring, in one night, every individual belonging to the French colony established there. This plot they actually executed, notwithstanding the seeming good understanding that subsisted between them and these European neighbours. Such was the secrecy which they observed, that no person had the least suspicion of their design until the blow was struck. One Frenchman alone escaped, by favour of the darkness, to relate the disaster of his countrymen. The compassion of a female Indian contributed also, in some measure, to his exemption from the general massacre. The tribe of *Natches* had invited the Indians of other countries,

countries, even to a considerable distance, to join in the same conspiracy. The day, or rather the night, was fixed, on which they were to make an united attack on the French colonists. It was intimated by sending a parcel of rods, more or less numerous according to the local distance of each tribe, with an injunction to abstract one rod daily; the day on which the last fell to be taken away being that fixed for the execution of their plan. The women were partners of the bloody secret. The parcels of rods being thus distributed, that belonging to the tribe of Natches happened to remain in the custody of a female. This woman, either moved by her own feelings of compassion, or by the commiseration expressed by her female acquaintances, in the view of the proposed scene of bloodshed, abstracted one day three or four of the rods, and thus anticipated the term of her tribe's proceeding to the execution of the general conspiracy. The consequence of this was, that the Natches were the only actors in this carnage; their distant associates having still several rods remaining at the time when the former made the attack. An opportunity was, thereby, given to the colonists, in those quarters, to take measures for their defence, and for preventing a more extensive execution of the design.

It was by conspiracies similar to this that the Indians of the province of Macas, in the kingdom of Quito, destroyed the opulent city of Logrogno, the colony of Guambaya, and its capital Sevilla del Oro; and that so completely, that it is no longer known in what place these settlements existed, or where that abundance of gold was
I found

found from which the last-mentioned city took the addition to its name. Similar ravages have been committed upon l'Imperial, in Chili, the colonies of the Missions of Chuncas, those of Darien, in Tierra-Ferme, and many other places, which have afforded scenes of this barbarous ferocity. These conspiracies are always carried on in the same manner. The secret is inviolably kept, the actors assemble at the precise hour appointed, and every individual is animated with the same sanguinary purposes. The males who fall into their hands are put to death, with every shocking circumstance than can be suggested by a cool and determined cruelty. The females are carried off and preserved, as monuments of their victory, to be employed as their occasions require.

Nor can this odious cruelty and treachery, it is said, be justly ascribed to their subjection to a foreign yoke, seeing the same character belongs equally to all the original inhabitants of this vast continent, even to those who have preserved their independence most completely. Certain it is, continues Ulloa, that these people, with the most limited capacities of every thing else, display an astonishing degree of penetration and subtlety, with respect to every object that involves treachery, bloodshed, and rapine. As to these, they seem to have been all educated at one school; and a secret, referring to any such plan, no consideration on earth can extort from them.

Their understandings also have been represented as not less contemptible than their manners are gross and brutal. Many nations, it has

G

been

been said, are neither capable of forming an arrangement for futurity, nor does their solicitude or foresight extend so far. They set no value upon those things of which they are not in some immediate want. In the evening, says father Labat, when a Carib is going to rest, no consideration will tempt him to sell his hammock; but in the morning he will part with it for the slightest trifle. At the close of winter, a North-American, mindful of what he has suffered from the cold, sets himself with vigour to prepare materials for erecting a comfortable hut, to protect him against the inclemency of the succeeding season: but as soon as the weather becomes mild, he abandons his work, and never thinks of it more till the return of the cold compels him to resume it.—In short, to be free from labour seems to be the utmost wish of an American. They will continue, whole days, stretched in their hammocks, or seated on the earth, without changing their posture, raising their eyes, or uttering a single word. They cannot compute the succession of days, nor of weeks. The different aspects of the moon alone engage their attention, as a measure of time. Of the year they have no other conception than what is suggested to them by the alternate heat of summer, and by the cold of winter; nor have they the least idea of applying to this period the obvious computation of the months which it contains. When it is asked of any old man, in Peru, even the most civilized, what age he is of? the only answer he can give is the number of caciques he has seen. It often happens, too, that they only recollect the most distant of these princes, in whose time
certain

certain circumstances had happened peculiarly memorable, whilst of those who lived in a more recent period they have lost all remembrance.

The same gross stupidity is alledged to be observable in those Indians who have retained their original liberty. They are never known to fix the dates of any events in their minds, or to trace the succession of circumstances that have arisen from such events. Their imagination takes in only the *present*, and in that only what intimately concerns themselves. Nor can discipline or instruction overcome this natural defect of apprehension. In fact, the subjected Indians in Peru, who have a continual intercourse with the Spaniards, who are furnished with curates perpetually occupied in giving them lessons of religion and morality, and who mix with all ranks of the civilized society established among them, are almost as stupid and barbarous as their countrymen who have had no such advantages. The Peruvians, while they lived under the government of their Incas, preserved the records of certain remarkable events. They had also a kind of regular government described by the historians of the conquest of Peru. This government originated entirely from the attention and abilities of their princes, and from the regulations enacted by them for directing the conduct of their subjects. This ancient degree of civilization among them gives ground to presume that their legislatures sprung from some race more enlightened than the other tribes of Indians; a race, of which no individual seems to remain in the present times.

Vanity and conceit are said to be blended with their ignorance, and treachery. Notwithstanding all they suffer from Europeans, they still, it is said, consider themselves as a race of men far superior to their conquerors. This proud belief, arising from their perverted ideas of excellence, is universal over the whole known continent of America. They do not think it possible that any people can be so intelligent as themselves. When they are detected in any of their plots, it is their common observation, that the Spaniards, or *Virochocas*, want to be as knowing as they are. Those of Louisiana and the countries adjacent, are equally vain of their superior understanding, confounding that quality with the cunning which they themselves constantly practise. The whole object of their transactions is to over-reach those with whom they deal. Yet though faithless themselves, they never forgive the breach of promise on the part of others. While the Europeans seek their amity by presents, they give themselves no concern to secure a reciprocal friendship. Hence, probably, arises their idea, that they must be a superior race of men, in ability and intelligence, to those who are at such pains to court their alliance, and avert their enmity.

Their natural eloquence has also been decried. The free tribes of savages who enter into conventions with the Europeans, it is observed, are accustomed to make long, pompous, and, according to their own notions, sublime harangues, but without any method, or connection. The whole is a collection of disjointed metaphors and comparisons. The light, heat, and course of
the

the sun, form the principal topic of their discourse; and these unintelligible reasonings are always accompanied with violent and ridiculous gestures. Numberless repetitions prolong the oration, which, if not interrupted, would last whole days: at the same time, they meditate very accurately, before hand, in order to avoid mentioning any thing but what they are desirous to obtain. This pompous faculty of making speeches is also one of the grounds on which they conceive themselves to be superior to the nations of Europe; they imagine that it is their eloquence that procures them the favours they ask. The subjected Indians converse precisely in the same style. Prolix and tedious, they never know when to stop; so that, excepting by the difference in language, it would be impossible, in this respect, to distinguish a civilized Peruvian from an inhabitant of the most savage districts to the northward.

CHAPTER VII.

All the Charges in the foregoing Chapter partial, and not free from misrepresentation—Buffon and M. de Pauw's Descriptions refuted—Errors as to their Want of Beard—Form and Aspect—Constitution and Corporal Abilities—Labour and Industry—Mental Quality.—M. de Pauw's proofs of their Cowardice refuted—Occasion of the famous Bull of Pope Paul III.—Representations of COLUMBUS—Conclusions concerning their Capacities—Ingenuity.—Tokens of Science.—Specimen of their Morality.

BUT such partial and detached views, as the above, were they even free from misrepresentation, are not the just ground upon which to form an estimate of the character of the aboriginal inhabitants of the New-World. Their qualities, good and bad, (for they certainly possess both), their way of life, the state of society among them, with all the circumstances of their condition, ought to be considered *in connection*, and in regard to their mutual influence. Such a view has been given in the preceding part of this Book: from which, it is hoped, their real character may be easily deduced.

Many of the disagreeable traits exhibited in the anecdotes just quoted, are, indeed, extracted from Don Ulloa; an author of credit and reputation; but a Spaniard, and evidently biased, in some degree, by a desire to palliate the enormities of his countrymen in that quarter of the globe. And, with regard to the worst and least equivocal parts

parts of the American character, cruelty and revenge; it may be fairly questioned, whether the instances of these, either in respect of their cause or their atrocity, be at all comparable to those exhibited in European history, and staining the annals of Christendom:—to those, for instance, of the Spaniards themselves, at their first discovery of America; to those indicated by the engines found on board their mighty Armada, in 1588; to those which, in cold blood, were perpetrated by the Dutch at Amboyna; to the dragoonings of the French; to their religious massacres: or, even, to the *tender mercies* of the Inquisition!

Still harsher, however, are the descriptions given by *Buffon* and *de Pauw*, of the natives of this whole continent, in which the most mortifying degeneracy of the human race, as well as of all the inferior animals, is asserted to be conspicuous. Against these philosophers, or rather theorists, however, the Americans have found an able advocate in the *Abbé Clavigero*; an historian, who, not only from his being a native of America, but also from his situation, and long residence in Mexico, has been enabled to obtain the best means of information, and who, though himself a subject of Spain, appears superior to prejudice, and disdains in his description the glosses of policy.

Concerning the stature of the Americans, *M. de Pauw* says, that although, in general, it is not equal to the stature of the Castilians, there is but little difference between them. But the *Abbé Clavigero* evinces, that the Indians who inhabit those countries lying between 9 and 40 degrees
of

of north latitude, which are the limits of the discoveries of the Spaniards, are more than five Parisian feet in height, and that those who do not reach that stature are as few in number amongst the Indians as they are amongst the Spaniards. It is besides certain, that many of the American nations, such as the *Apaches*, the *Hiaquese*, the *Pimefe*, and *Cochimies*, are at least as tall as the tallest Europeans; and that, in all the vast extent of the New-World, no race of people has been found, except the Esquimaux, in the north, and west; and the Yacana-cunnees, and Pesserais, &c. in the south, so diminutive in stature as the Laplanders, the *Samojeds*, and Tartars, in the north of the Old-Continent. In this respect, therefore, the inhabitants of the two continents are upon an equality.

Of the shape and character of the Mexican Indians, the Abbé gives a most advantageous description; which he asserts, no one who reads it, in America, will contradict, unless he views them with the eye of a prejudiced mind. It is true, that Ulloa says, in speaking of the Indians of Quito, he had observed that “imperfect people abounded among them; that they were either irregularly diminutive, or monstrous in some other respect; that they became either insensible, dumb, or blind; or wanted some limb of their body.” Having, therefore, made some inquiry respecting this singularity of the Quitans, the Abbé found, that such defects were neither caused by what he calls bad humours, nor by the climate, but by the mistaken and blind humanity of their parents, who, in order to free their children from the hardships and toils to which
the

the healthy Indians are subjected by the Spaniards, fix some deformity or weakness upon them, that they may become useless: a circumstance of misery which does not happen in other countries of America, nor in those places of the same kingdom of Quito, where the Indians are under no such oppression. M. de Pauw, and, in agreement with him, Dr Robertson, says, that no deformed persons are to be found among the savages of America; because, like the ancient Lacedemonians, they put to death those children which are born hunch-backed, blind, or defective, in any limb; but that in those countries where they are formed into societies, and where the vigilance of their rulers prevents the murder of such infants, the number of their deformed individuals is greater than it is in any country of Europe. This would make an exceedingly good solution of the difficulty if it were true: but if, possibly, there has been in America a tribe of savages who have imitated the barbarous example of the celebrated Lacedemonians, it is certain that those authors have no grounds to impute such inhumanity to the rest of the Americans: and it has not been the practice, at least with the far greater part of those nations, as may be demonstrated from the attestations of authors who are the best acquainted with their customs.

No argument against the New-World can be drawn from the colour of the Americans; for their colour is less distant from the white of the Europeans than it is from the black of the Africans, and a great part of the Asiatics. The hair of the Mexicans, and of the greater part of the
Indians,

Indians, is, as we have already said, coarse and thick; on their faces they appear to have little, and in general none on their arms and legs: but it is an error to say, as M. de Pauw does, that they are entirely destitute of hair in all the other parts of their body. This is one of the many passages in the *Philosophical Researches*, at which the Mexicans, and all the other nations, must smile, to find an European philosopher so eager to divest them of the dress they had from nature. Don Ulloa, indeed, in the description which he gives of the Indians of Quito, says, that hair neither grows upon the men nor upon the women when they arrive at puberty, as it does on the rest of mankind; but whatever singularity may attend the Quitans, or occasion this circumstance, there is no doubt that among the Americans in general, the period of puberty is accompanied with the same symptoms as it is among other nations of the world. In fact, with the North-Americans, it is disgraceful to be hairy on the body. They say it likens them to hogs. They, therefore, pluck the hair as fast as it appears. But the traders who marry their women, and prevail on them to discontinue this practice, say, that nature is the same with them as with the whites. As to the beards of the men, had Buffon, or de Pauw, known the pains and trouble it costs them to pluck out by the root the hair that grows on their faces, they would have seen that nature had not been deficient in that respect. Every nation has its customs. "I have seen an Indian beau, with a looking-glass in his hand (says Mr Jefferson), examining his face, for hours together, and plucking out, by the roots,

every

every hair he could discover, with a kind of tweezer made of a piece of fine brass wire, that had been twisted round a stick, and which he used with great dexterity."

The very aspect of an Angolan, a Mandingan, or a Congan, would have shocked M. de Pauw, and made him recal the censure which he passes on the colour, the make, and hair of the Americans. What can be imagined more contrary to the idea *we* have of beauty, and the perfection of the human frame, than a man, whose skin is black as ink, whose head and face are covered with black wool, instead of hair, whose eyes are yellow and bloody, whose lips are thick and blackish, and whose nose is flat? Such are the inhabitants of a very large portion of Africa, and of many islands of Asia. What men can be more imperfect than those who measure no more than four feet in stature, whose faces are long and flat, the nose compressed, the irides yellowish black, the eye-lids turned back towards the temples, the cheeks extraordinarily elevated, their mouths monstrously large, their lips thick and prominent, and the lower part of their visages extremely narrow? Such, according to Count de Buffon, are the Laplanders, the Zemblans, the Borandines, the Samojeds, and the Tartars, in the East. What objects more deformed than men whose faces are too long and wrinkled even in their youth, their noses thick and compressed, their eyes small and sunk, their cheeks very much raised, the upper-jaw low, their teeth long and disunited, eye-brows so thick that they shade their eyes, the eye-lids
thick,

thick, some bristles on their faces instead of beard, large thighs and small legs? Such is the picture Count de Buffon gives of the Tartars; that is, of those people who, as he says, inhabit a tract of land in Asia 1200 leagues long and upwards, and more than 750 broad. Amongst these, the Calmucks are the most remarkable for their deformity; which is so great, that, according to Tavernier, they are the most brutal men of all the universe. Their faces are so broad that there is a space of five, or six, inches between their eyes, as Count de Buffon himself affirms. In Calicut, in Ceylon, and in other countries of India, there is, say Pyrard, and other writers, on those regions, a race of men who have one, or both, of their legs as thick as the body of a man; and that this deformity among them is almost hereditary.

If we were, in like manner, to go through the nations of Asia and Africa, we should hardly find any extensive country where the colour of men is not darker, where there are not stronger irregularities observed, and grosser defects to be found in them, than even the penetrating eye of de Pauw could discover in the Americans. The colour of the latter is a good deal clearer than that of almost all the Africans and the inhabitants of south Asia. Even their alledged scantiness of beard is common to the inhabitants of the Philippine-Islands, and of all the Indian-Archipelago, to the famous Chinese, Japannese, Tartars, and many other nations of the Old-Continent. The imperfections of the Americans, however great they may be represented to be, are, certainly, not

2

comparable

comparable with the defects of that immense people, whose character we have sketched, and others whom we omit.

M. de Pauw represents the Americans to be a feeble and diseased set of nations; and, in order to demonstrate the weakness and disorder of their physical constitution, adduces several proofs equally ridiculous and ill-founded, and which it will not be expected we should enumerate. He alleges, among other particulars, that they were overcome in wrestling by all the Europeans, and that they sunk under a moderate burden; that by a computation made, 200,000 Americans were found to have perished, in one year, from carrying of baggage. With respect to the first point, the Abbé Clavigero observes, it would be necessary that the experiment of wrestling was made between many individuals of each continent, and that the victory should be attested by the Americans, as well as by the Europeans. It is not, however, meant to insinuate, that the Americans are stronger than the Europeans. They may be less strong, without the human species having degenerated in them. The Swiss are stronger than the Italians; and still we do not believe the Italians are degenerated, nor do we tax the climate of Italy. The instance of 200,000 Americans having died, in one year, under the weight of baggage, were it true, would not convince us so much of the weakness of the Americans, as of the inhumanity of the Europeans. In the same manner that these 200,000 Americans perished, 200,000 Prussians would also have perished, had they been obliged to make a journey of between 300 and 400 miles, with

100 pounds of burden upon their backs ; if they had collars of iron about their necks, and were obliged to carry that load over rocks and mountains ; if those who became exhausted with fatigue, or wounded their feet so as to impede their progress, had their heads cut off that they might not retard the pace of the rest ; and if they were not allowed but a small morsel of bread to enable them to support so severe a toil. Las Casas, from whom M. de Pauw got the account of the 200,000 Americans, who died under the fatigue of carrying baggage, relates, also, all the above mentioned circumstances. If that author, therefore, is to be credited in the last, he is also to be credited in the first. But, a philosopher who vaunts the physical and moral qualities of Europeans, over those of the Americans, would have done better, we think, to have suppressed facts so opprobrious to the Europeans themselves.

Nothing, in fact, demonstrates so clearly the robustness of the Americans as those various, and lasting, fatigues in which they are continually engaged. M. de Pauw says, that when the New-World was discovered, nothing was to be seen but thick woods ; that, at present, there are some lands cultivated, not by the Americans, however, but by the Africans, and Europeans ; and that the soil in cultivation is to the soil which is uncultivated as 2000 to 2000,000. These three assertions the Abbé Clavigero demonstrates to be precisely so many errors. Since the conquest, the Americans alone have been the people who have supported all the fatigues of agriculture in all the vast countries of the continent of South-
America

America, and in the greater part of those of North-America subject to the crown of Spain. No European is ever to be seen employed in the labours of the field. The Moors who, in comparison of the Americans, are very few in number in the kingdom of New-Spain, are charged with the culture of the sugar-cane, and tobacco, and the making of sugar; but the soil destined for the cultivation of those plants is not, with respect to all the cultivated land of that country, in the proportion of one to two thousand. The Americans are the people who labour on the soil. They are the tillers, the sowers, the weeders, and the reapers of the wheat, of the maize, of the rice, of the beans, and other kinds of grain or pulse, of the cocoa, of the vanilla, of the cotton, of the indigo, and all other plants useful to the sustenance, the cloathing, and commerce of those provinces; and without them so little can be done, that in the year 1762, the harvest of wheat was abandoned, in many places, on account of a sickness which prevailed, and prevented the Indians from reaping it. But this is not all; the Americans are they who cut and transport all the necessary timber from the woods; who cut, transport, and work the stones; who make lime, plaster, and tiles; who construct all the buildings of that kingdom, except a few places where none of them inhabit; who open and repair all the roads, who make canals and sluices, and clean the cities. They work in many mines of gold, of silver, of copper, &c.: they are the shepherds, herdsmen, weavers, potters, basket-makers, bakers, couriers, day-labourers, &c.: in a word, they are the persons

who bear all the burden of public labours. These, says our justly indignant author, are the employments of the weak, dastardly, and useless Americans; while the vigorous M. de Pauw, and other indefatigable Europeans, are occupied in writing invectives against them.

These labours, in which the Indians are continually employed, certainly, attest their healthiness and strength; for if they are able to undergo such fatigues, they cannot be diseased, nor have an exhausted stream of blood in their veins, as M. de Pauw insinuates. In order to make it believed that their constitutions are vitiated, he copies whatever he finds written by historians of America, whether true or false, respecting the diseases which reign in some particular countries of that great continent. It is not to be denied, that in some countries in the wide compass of America, men are exposed, more than elsewhere, to the distempers which are occasioned by the intemperature of the air, or the pernicious quality of the aliments; but it is certain, according to the assertion of many respectable authors acquainted with the New-World, that the American countries are, for the most part, healthy; and if the Americans were disposed to retaliate on M. de Pauw, and other European authors, who write as he does, they would have abundant subject of materials to throw discredit on the clime of the Old-Continent, and the constitution of its inhabitants in the endemic distempers which prevail there.

Lastly, the supposed feebleness and unsound bodily habit of the Americans do not correspond with the length of their lives. Among those
American

Americans whose great fatigues and excessive toils do not anticipate their death, there are not a few who reach the age of 80, 90, and 100, or more, years, as formerly mentioned; and, what is more, without there being observed in them that decay which time commonly produces in the hair, in the teeth, in the skin, and in the muscles of the human body. This phenomenon, so much admired by the Spaniards who reside in Mexico, cannot be ascribed to any other cause than the vigour of their constitutions, the temperance of their diet, and the salubrity of their climate. Historians, and other persons who have sojourned there for many years, report the same thing of other countries of the New-World.

As to the mental qualities of the Americans, M. de Pauw has not been able to discover any other characters than a memory so feeble, that to-day they do not remember what they did yesterday; a capacity so blunt, that they are incapable of thinking or putting their ideas in order; a disposition so cold, that they feel no excitement of love; a dastardly spirit, and a genius that is torpid, and indolent. Many other Europeans, indeed, and what is still more wonderful, many of those children or descendants of Europeans who are born in America, think as M. de Pauw does; some from ignorance, some from want of reflection, and others from hereditary prejudice and prepossession. But all this, and much more, would not be sufficient to invalidate the testimonies of other Europeans, whose authority has a great deal more weight, both because they were men of great judgment,
H 3 learning,

learning, and knowledge, of these countries, and because they give their testimony in favour of strangers, against their own countrymen. In particular, Acosta, whose *Natural and Moral History* even de Pauw commends, as *an excellent work*, employs the whole sixth book in demonstrating the good sense of the Americans, by an explanation of their ancient government, their laws, their histories in paintings and knots, calenders, &c. M. de Pauw thinks the Americans are bestial; Acosta, on the other hand, reputes those persons weak and presumptuous who think them so. M. de Pauw says, that the most acute Americans were inferior in industry and sagacity to the rudest nations of the Old-Continent: Acosta extols the civil government of the Mexicans above many republics of Europe. M. de Pauw finds, in the moral and political conduct of the Americans, nothing but barbarity, extravagance, and brutality; and Acosta finds there, laws which are admirable and worthy of being preserved for ever.

M. de Pauw denies them courage, and alleges the conquest of Mexico as a proof of their cowardice. "Cortes (says he), conquered the empire of Mexico with 450 vagabonds, and 15 horses, badly armed: his miserable artillery consisted of six falconets, which would not at the present day be capable of exciting the fears of a fortress defended by invalids. During his absence, the capital was held in awe by the half of his troops. What men! what events!—It is confirmed by the depositions of all historians, that the Spaniards entered, the first time, into Mexico without making one single discharge of their artillery.

If the title of hero is applicable to him who has the disgrace to occasion the death of a great number of rational animals, Ferdinand Cortes might pretend to it; otherwise I do not see what true glory he has acquired by the overthrow of a tottering monarchy, which might have been destroyed, in the same manner, by any other assassin of our continent." These passages indicate either M. de Pauw's ignorance of the history of the conquest of Mexico, or a wilful suppression of what would openly contradict his system; since all who have read that history know well, that the conquest of Mexico was not made with 450 men, but with more than 200,000. Cortes himself, to whom it was of more importance than to M. de Pauw to make his bravery conspicuous, and his conquest appear glorious, confesses the excessive number of the allies who were under his command, at the siege of the capital, and combated with more fury against the Mexicans than the Spaniards themselves. According to the account which Cortes gave to the emperor Charles V. the siege of Mexico began with 87 horses, 848 Spanish infantry, armed with guns, cross-bows, swords, and lances, and upwards of 75,000 allies, of Tlascala, Huexotzinco, Cholula, and Chalco, equiped with various sorts of arms; with three large pieces of cannon of iron, 15 small of copper, and 13 brigantines. In the course of the siege were assembled the numerous nations of the Otomies, the Cohuixcas, and Matlazincas, and the troops of the populous cities of the lakes; so that the army of the besiegers not only exceeded 200,000, but amounted to 400,000, according to the letter from Cortes;

and

and besides these, 3000 boats and canoes came to their assistance. Did it betray cowardice to have sustained, for full 75 days, the siege of an open city, engaging, daily, with an army so large, and in part provided with arms so superior, and at the same time having to withstand the ravages of famine? Can they merit the charge of cowardice, who, after having lost seven of the eight parts of their city, and about 50,000 citizens, part cut off by the sword, part by famine and sickness, continued to defend themselves until they were furiously assaulted in the last hold which was left them?

According to M. de Pauw, “the Americans
 “at first were not believed to be men, but rather
 “satyrs, or large apes, which might be murdered, without remorse, or reproach. At
 “last, in order to add insult to the oppression of
 “those times, a pope made an original bull, in
 “which he declared, that being desirous of
 “founding bishoprics in the richest countries of
 “America, it pleased him and the Holy-Spirit,
 “to acknowledge the Americans to be true men:
 “in so far, that without this decision of an Italian,
 “the inhabitants of the New-World would have
 “appeared, even at this day, to the eyes of the
 “faithful, a race of equivocal men. There is no
 “example of such a decision since this globe has
 “been inhabited by men and apes.” Upon this passage the Abbé Clavigero animadverts, as being a singular instance of calumny and misrepresentation; and gives the following history of the decision alluded to.

“Some of the first Europeans who established themselves in America, not less powerful than
 avaricious,

avaricious, desirous of enriching themselves to the detriment of the Americans, kept them continually employed, and made use of them as slaves; and, in order to avoid the reproaches, which were made them, by the bishops and missionaries, who inculcated humanity, and the giving liberty to those people to get themselves instructed in religion, that they might do their duties towards the church, and their families, alleged, that the Indians were by nature slaves and incapable of being instructed; and many other falsehoods of which the Chronicler Herrera makes mention against them. Those zealous ecclesiastics being unable, either by their authority, or preaching, to free those unhappy converts from the tyranny of such misers, had recourse to the Catholic kings, and, at last, obtained from their justice and clemency, those laws, as favourable to the Americans as honourable to the court of Spain, that compose the Indian code, which were chiefly due to the indefatigable zeal of the bishop de las Casas. On another side, Garces, bishop of Tlascala, knowing that those Spaniards bore, notwithstanding their perversity, a great respect to the decision of the vicar of Jesus Christ, made application, in the year 1586, to pope Paul III. by that famous letter, of which we have made mention; representing to him the evils which the Indians suffered from the wicked Christians, and praying him to interpose his authority in their behalf. The pope, moved by such heavy remonstrances, dispatched, the next year, the original bull, a faithful copy of which we have here subjoined

(A),

(A), which was not made, as is manifest, to declare the Americans true men; for such a piece of weakness was very distant from that, or any other pope: but solely to support the natural rights

(A) Paulus papa III. universis Christi Fidelibus presentes Literas inspecturis Salutem & Apostolicam Benedictionem—
 “ Veritas ipsa, quæ nec falli, nec fallere potest, cum Prædicatores Fidei ad officium prædicationis destinaret, dixisse dignoscitur: Euntes docete omnes gentes: omnes, dixit, absque omni delectu, cum omnes Fidei disciplinæ capaces existant. Quod videns & invidens ipsius humani generis æmulus, qui bonis operibus, ut pereant, semper adversatur, modum excogitavit hætenus inauditum, quo impediret, ne Verbum Dei Gentibus, ut salvæ fierent, prædicaretur: ut quosdam suos satellites commovit, qui suam cupiditatem adimplere cupientes. Occidentales & Meridionales Indos, & alias Gentes, quæ temporibus istis ad nostram notitiam pervenerunt, sub prætextu quod Fidei Catholicæ expertes existant, uti bruta animalia, ad nostra obsequia redigendos esse, passim asserere præsumant, & eos in servitutem redigunt tantis afflictionibus illos urgentes, quantis vix bruta animalia illis servientia urgeant. Nos igitur, qui ejusdem Domini nostri vices, licet indigni, gerimus in terris, & Oves gregis sui nobis commissas, quæ extra ejus Ovile sunt, ad ipsum Ovile toto nixu exquirimus, attendentes Indos ipsos, ut pote veros homines, non solum Christianæ Fidei capaces existere, sed, ut nobis innotuit, ad Fidem ipsam promptissime currere, ac volentes super his congruis remediis providere, prædictos Indos & omnes alias gentes ad notitiam Christianorum in posterum deventuras, licet extra fidem Christi existant, sua libertate & dominio hujusmodi uti, & potiri, & gaudere libere, & licere posse, nec in servitutem redigi debere, ac quicquid secus fieri contigerit irritum & inane, ipsosque Indos, & alias Gentes Verbi Dei prædicatione, & exemplo bonæ vitæ ad dictam Fidem Christi invitandos fore. Auctoritate Apostolica per præsentis literas decernimus, & declaramus, non obstantibus præmissis, cæterisque contrariis quibuscunque.” Datum Romæ anno 1537. IV. Non. Jun. Pontificatus nostri anno III. Questa, è non aitra è quella famosa bulla, per la quale s' è fatto un sì grande schiamazzo.

rights of the Americans, against the attempts of their oppressors, and to condemn the injustice and inhumanity of those, who, under the pretence of supposing those people idolatrous, or incapable of being instructed, took from them their property and their liberty, and treated them as slaves and beasts."

But, if, at first, the Americans were esteemed satyrs, nobody can better prove it than Christopher Columbus, their discoverer. Let us hear, therefore, how that celebrated admiral speaks, in his account to Ferdinand and Isabella, of the first satyrs he saw in the island of Haiti, or Hispaniola. "I swear," he says, "to your majesties, that there is not a better people in the world than these, more affectionate, affable, or mild. They love their neighbours as themselves; their language is the sweetest, the softest, and the most cheerful; for they always speak smiling; and although they go naked, let your majesties believe me, their customs are very becoming; and their king, who is served with great majesty, has such engaging manners, that it gives great pleasure to see him, and also to consider the great retentive faculty of that people, and their desire of knowledge, which incites them to ask the causes and the effects of things."

"We have had intimate commerce with the Americans (continues the Abbé); have lived, for some years, in a seminary destined for their instruction; saw the erection and progress of the royal college of Guadaloupe founded, in Mexico, by a Mexican Jesuit, for the education of Indian children; had, afterwards, some Indians among our pupils; had particular knowledge of many
American

American rectors, many nobles, and numerous artists; attentively, observed their character, their genius, their disposition, and manner of thinking; and have examined, besides, with the utmost diligence, their ancient history, their religion, their government, their laws, and their customs. After such long experience and study of them, from which we imagine ourselves enabled to decide, without danger of erring, we declare to M. de Pauw, and to all Europe, that the mental qualities of the Americans are not in the least inferior to those of the Europeans; that they are capable of all, even the most abstract, sciences; and that if equal care was taken of their education, if they were brought up from childhood in seminaries, under good masters, were protected and stimulated by rewards, we should see rise among the Americans, philosophers, mathematicians, and divines, who would rival the first in Europe."

But, although we should suppose, that, in the torrid climates of the New-World, as well as in those of the Old, especially under the additional depression of slavery, there was an inferiority of the mental powers; the Chilese, and the North-Americans, have discovered higher rudiments of human excellence and ingenuity than have, perhaps ever been known among tribes in a similar state of society, in any part of the world.

M. de Pauw affirms, that the Americans were unacquainted with the use of money, and quotes the following well-known passage from Montesquieu: "Imagine to yourself that, by some accident, you are placed in an unknown country; if you find money there, do not doubt that you

are arrived among a polished people." But, if by money we are to understand a piece of metal with the stamp of the prince, or of the public, the want of it in a nation is no token of barbarity. The Athenians employed oxen for money, as the Romans did sheep. The Romans had no coined money till the time of Servius Tullius, nor had the Persians until the reign of Darius Hystaspes. But, if by money is understood a sign representing the value of merchandise, the Mexicans, and other nations of Anahuac, employed money in their commerce. The cacao, of which they made constant use in the market to purchase whatever they wanted, was employed for this purpose, as salt is in Abyssinia.

It has been affirmed, that stone bridges were unknown in America, when it was first discovered; and that the natives did not know how to form arches. But, these assertions are erroneous. The remains of the ancient palaces of Tezcuco, and, still more, their vapour baths, show the ancient use of arches and of vaults among the Mexicans. But the ignorance of this art would have been no proof of barbarity. Neither the Egyptians nor Babylonians understood the construction of arches.

M. de Pauw affirms, that the palace of Montezuma was nothing else than a *hut*. But, it is certain, from the affirmation of all the historians of Mexico, that the army under Cortes, consisting of 6,400 men, were all lodged in the palace; and there remained still sufficient room for Montezuma and his attendants.

The advances which the Mexicans had made in the noble science of astronomy, is, perhaps,
I the

most surprising proof of their attention and sagacity: for it appears, from Abbé Clavigero's *History*, that they not only counted 365 days to the year, but also knew of the excess of about six hours in the solar over the civil year, and remedied the difference, by means of intercalary days.

Of American morality, the following exhortation of a Mexican to his son may serve as a specimen. "My son, who art come into the light from the womb of thy mother like a chicken from the egg, and, like it, art preparing to fly through the world, we know not how long Heaven will grant to us the enjoyment of that precious gem which we possess in thee; but however short the period, endeavour to live exactly, praying God continually to assist thee. He created thee; thou art his property. He is thy father, and loves thee still more than I do: repose in him thy thoughts, and day and night direct thy sighs to him. Reverence and salute thy elders, and hold no one in contempt. To the poor and distressed be not dumb, but rather use words of comfort. Honour all persons, particularly thy parents, to whom thou owest obedience, respect, and service. Guard against imitating the example of those wicked sons, who, like brutes that are deprived of reason, neither reverence their parents, listen to their instruction, nor submit to their correction; because whoever follows their steps will have an unhappy end, will die in a desperate or sudden manner, or will be killed, and devoured, by wild beasts.

"Mock not, my son, the aged, or the imperfect. Scorn not him whom you see fall into
some

some folly, or transgression, nor make him reproaches; but restrain thyself, and beware lest thou fall into the same error which offends thee in another. Go not where thou art not called, nor interfere in that which does not concern thee. Endeavour to manifest thy good breeding, in all thy words, and actions. In conversation, do not lay thy hands upon another, nor speak too much, nor interrupt or disturb another's discourse. When any one discourses with thee, hear him, attentively, and hold thyself in an easy attitude, neither playing with thy feet, nor putting thy mantle to thy mouth, nor spitting too often, nor looking about you here and there, nor rising up frequently if thou art sitting; for such actions are indications of levity, and low-breeding."—The father proceeds to mention several particular vices which are to be avoided, and concludes—"Steal not, nor give thyself to gaming; otherwise thou wilt be a disgrace to thy parents, whom thou oughtest rather to honour for the education they have given thee. If thou wilt be virtuous, thy example will put the wicked to shame. No more my son; enough hath been said in discharge of the duties of a father. With these counsels I wish to fortify thy mind. Refuse them not, nor act in contradiction to them; for on them thy life, and all thy happiness, depend."

C H A P. VIII.

M. Buffon's Notions concerning the Degeneracy of the Inhabitants of the New-World, refuted by Mr. Jefferson—Their seeming Coldness to the Sex accounted for—Why they have few Children—their Sensibility, &c.—their Courage—Story of Logan—Specimen of Indian Eloquence.—Other Anecdotes—their Politeness and Civility—their Hospitality.

AS ranging on the same side with the Abbé Clavigero, our countryman Mr Jefferson deserves particular attention. This gentleman, in his *Notes on the State of Virginia, &c.* has taken occasion to combat the opinions of Buffon; and seems, in many instances, to have fully refuted them, both by argument and by facts.

Of the inhabitants of America, the French philosopher gives the following description: “ Though the American savage be nearly of the same stature with men in polished societies; yet this is not a sufficient exception to the general contraction of animated Nature throughout the whole continent. In the savage, the organs of generation are small and feeble. He has no hair, no beard, no ardour for the female. Though nimbler than the European, because more accustomed to running, his strength is not so great. His sensations are less acute; and yet he is more timid and cowardly. He has no vivacity, no activity of mind. The activity of his body is not so much an exercise or spontaneous motion, as a necessary action produced by want. Destroy
his

his appetite for victuals and drink, and you will, at once, annihilate the active principle of all his movements: he remains in stupid repose, on his limbs, or couch, for whole days. It is easy to discover the cause of the scattered life of savages, and of their estrangement from society. They have been refused the most precious spark of Nature's fire: they have no ardour for women, and of course, no love to mankind. Unacquainted with the most lively and the most tender of all attachments, their other sensations of this nature are cold and languid. Their love to parents and children is extremely weak. The bonds of the most intimate of all societies, that of the same family, are feeble; and one family has no attachment to another. Hence no union, no republic, no social state can take place among them. The physical cause of love gives rise to the morality of their manners. Their heart is frozen, their society cold, and their empire cruel. They regard their families as servants destined to labour, or as beasts of burden, whom they load unmercifully with the produce of their hunting, and oblige, without pity or gratitude, to perform labours which often exceed their strength. They have few children, and pay little attention to them. Every thing must be referred to the first cause: they are indifferent because they are weak; and this indifference to the sex is the original stain which disgraces Nature; prevents her from expanding, and by destroying the germs of life, cuts the root of society. Hence, man makes no exception to what has been advanced. Nature, by denying him

the faculty of love, has abused and contracted him more than any other animal."

An humiliating picture, indeed! but than which, Mr Jefferson assures us, never was one more unlike the original. M. Buffon grants, that their stature is the same as that of the men of Europe, and he might have admitted, that the Iroquois were larger, and the Lenopi, or Delawares, taller, than people in Europe generally are. But, he says, their organs of generation are smaller and weaker than those of Europeans: which is not *known*, at least, to be a fact. And as to their want of beard, this error has been already noticed.

"They have no ardour for their females."—It is true, they do not indulge those excesses, nor discover that fondness, which are customary in Europe; but this is not owing to a defect in nature, but to manners. The soul of the Indian is wholly bent upon war. This is what procures him glory among the men, and makes him the admiration of the women. To this he is educated, from his earliest youth. When he pursues game with ardour, when he bears the fatigues of the chase, when he sustains and suffers patiently hunger and cold; it is not so much for the sake of the game he pursues, as to convince his parents and the council of the nation, that he is fit to be enrolled in the number of the warriors. The songs of the women, the dance of the warriors, the sage counsel of the chiefs, the tales of the old, the triumphal entry of the warriors returning, with success, from battle, and the respect paid to those who distinguish

guish themselves in battle, and in subduing their enemies; in short, every thing he sees or hears tends to inspire the Indian with an ardent desire for military fame. If a young man were to discover a fondness for women before he has been at war, he would become the contempt of the men, and the scorn and ridicule of the women; or were he to indulge himself with a captive taken in war, and much more were he to offer violence in order to gratify his lust, he would incur indelible disgrace. The seeming frigidity of the American, therefore, is the effect of manners, and not a defect of nature. He is neither more defective in ardour, nor impotent with the female, than a white man reduced to the same diet and exercise.

“They raise few children.”—They, indeed, raise fewer children than we do; the causes of which are to be found not in a difference of nature, but of circumstance. The women very frequently attending the men in their parties of war and of hunting, child-bearing becomes extremely inconvenient to them. It is said, therefore, that they have learned the practice of procuring abortion by the use of certain vegetables; and that they even tend to prevent conception for a considerable time after. During these parties, they are exposed to numerous hazards, to excessive exertions, to the greatest extremities of hunger. Even at their homes, the nation depends for food, through a certain part of every year, on the gleanings of the forest; that is, they experience a famine once in every year. With all animals, if the female be badly fed, or not fed at all, her young perish; and if both male
and

and female be reduced to like want, generation becomes less active, less productive. To the obstacles, then of want and hazard, which nature has opposed to the multiplication of wild animals for the purpose of restraining their numbers within certain bounds, those of labour and of voluntary abortion are added with the Indian. No wonder, then, if they multiply less than we do. Where food is regularly supplied, a single farm will show more of cattle than a whole country of forests can of buffaloes. The same Indian women, when married to white traders, who feed them and their children plentifully and regularly, who exempt them from excessive drudgery, who keep them stationary and unexposed to accident, produce, and raise, as many children as the white women. Instances are known, under these circumstances, of their rearing a dozen children.

Neither do they seem to be "deficient in natural affection." On the contrary their sensibility is keen, even the warriors weep most bitterly on the loss of their children, though, in general, they endeavour to appear superior to human events.

Their friendships are strong, and faithful to the uttermost extremity. A remarkable instance of this appeared in the case of the late Col. Byrd of Virginia, who was sent to the Cheerake nation to transact some business with them. It happened that some of our disorderly people had just killed one or two of that nation. It was, therefore, proposed in the council of the Cheerake, that Col. Byrd should be put to death in revenge for the loss of their countrymen. Among them was a chief called *Silvuer*, who, on some former occasion,

occasion, had contracted an acquaintance and friendship with Col. Byrd. He came to him every night, in his tent, and told him not to be afraid, they should not kill him. After many days deliberation, however, the determination was, contrary to Silouee's expectation, that Byrd should be put to death, and some warriors were dispatched as executioners. Silouee attended them; and when they entered the tent, he threw himself between them and Byrd, and said to the warriors, "This man is my friend: before you get at him you must kill me." On which they returned; and the council respected the principle so much as to recede from their determination.

That "they are timorous and cowardly" is a character with which there is little reason to charge them, when we recollect the manner in which the Iroquois met Mons.—, who marched into their country; in which the old men, who scorned to fly, or to survive the capture of their town, braved death, like the old Romans, in the time of the Gauls, and in which they soon after revenged themselves by sacking and destroying Montreal. In short, the Indian is brave, when an enterprise depends on bravery; education with him making the point of honour to consist in the destruction of an enemy by stratagem, and in the preservation of his own person free from injury: or, perhaps, this is nature, while it is education which teaches us to honour force more than finesse. He will defend himself against an host of enemies, always choosing to be killed rather than to surrender, though it be to the whites, who, he knows, will treat him well.

well. In other situations, also, he meets death with more deliberation; and endures tortures with a firmness unknown almost to religious enthusiasm among us.

Much less are they to be characterized as a people of no vivacity, and who are excited to action or motion only by the calls of hunger and thirst. Their dances, in which they so much delight, and which to a European would be the most severe exercise, fully contradict this; not to mention their fatiguing marches, and the toil they voluntarily and cheerfully undergo in their military expeditions. It is true, that when at home they do not employ themselves in labour or the culture of the soil: but this, again, is the effect of customs and manners which have assigned that to the province of the women. But it is said, "they are averse to society and a social life." Can any thing be more inapplicable than this, to a people who always live in towns, or in clans? Or can they be said to have no *republicque*, who conduct all their affairs in national councils; who pride themselves in their national character; who consider an insult or injury, done to an individual by a stranger, as done to the whole, and resent it, accordingly?

To form a just estimate of their genius and mental powers, Mr Jefferson observes, more facts are wanting, and great allowance is to be made for those circumstances of their situation which call for a display of particular talents only. This done, we shall, probably, find that the Americans are formed, in mind as well as in body, on the same model with the *homo sapiens Europæus*. The principles of their society forbidding all
 compulsion,

compulsion, they are to be led to duty and to enterprise by personal influence and persuasion. Hence eloquence in council, bravery and address in war, become the foundations of all consequence with them. To these acquirements all their faculties are directed. Of their bravery and address in war we have multiplied proofs, because we have been the subjects on which they were exercised. Of their eminence in oratory we have fewer examples, because it is displayed chiefly in their own councils. Some, however, we have of very superior lustre. We may challenge the whole orations of Demosthenes and Cicero, and of any more eminent orator, if Europe has furnished more eminent, to produce a single passage superior to the speech of Logan, a Mingo chief, to Lord Dunmore, when governor of Virginia. The story is as follows; of which, and of the speech, the authenticity is unquestionable. In the spring of the year 1774, a robbery and murder were committed on an inhabitant of the frontiers of Virginia by two Indians, of the Shawanae tribe. The neighbouring whites, according to their custom, undertook to punish this outrage, in a summary way. Colonel Cresap, a man infamous for the many murders he had committed on those much-injured people, collected a party, and proceeded down the Kanhaway, in quest of vengeance. Unfortunately, a canoe of women and children, with one man only, was seen coming from the opposite shore, unarmed, and unsuspecting any hostile attack from the whites. Cresap and his party concealed themselves on the bank of the river; and the moment the canoe reached

reached the shore, singled out their objects, and, at one fire, killed every person in it. This happened to be the family of Logan, who had long been distinguished as a friend of the whites. This unworthy return provoked his vengeance. He accordingly signalized himself in the war which ensued. In the autumn of the same year, a decisive battle was fought at the mouth of the Great Kanhaway, between the collected forces of the Shawanaes, Mingoos, and Delawares, and a detachment of the Virginia militia. The Indians were defeated, and sued for peace. Logan, however, disdained to be seen among the suppliants; but, lest the sincerity of a treaty should be distrusted from which so distinguished a chief absented himself, he sent, by a messenger, the following speech, to be delivered to Lord Dunmore:—"I appeal to any white man to say if ever he entered Logan's cabin hungry, and he gave him not meat; if ever he came cold and naked, and he clothed him not. During the course of the last long and bloody war, Logan remained idle in his cabin, an advocate for peace. Such was my love for the whites, that my countrymen pointed as they passed, and said, *Logan is the friend of white men*. I had even thought to have lived with you, but for the injuries of one man. Colonel Cresap, the last spring, in cold blood, and unprovoked, murdered all the relations of Logan, not sparing even my women and children. There runs not a drop of my blood in the veins of any living creature. This called on me for revenge. I have sought it; I have killed many; I have fully glutted my vengeance. For my country, I rejoice at the beams

of peace; but do not harbour a thought that mine is the joy of fear. Logan never felt fear. He will not turn on his heel to save his life. Who is there to mourn for Logan? Not one."

To the preceding anecdotes, in favour of the American character, may be added the following, by Dr. Benjamin Franklin.—'The Indian men, when young, are hunters and warriors; when old, counsellors; for all their government is by the counsel or advice of the sages. Hence, they generally study oratory; the best speakers having the most influence. The Indian women till the ground, dress the food, nurse and bring up the children, and preserve and hand down to posterity the memory of public transactions. These employments of men and women are accounted natural and honourable. Having few artificial wants, they have abundance of leisure for improvement by conversation. Our laborious manner of life, compared with theirs, they esteem slavish and base: and the learning on which we value ourselves, they regard as frivolous and useless.

Having frequent occasions to hold public councils, they have acquired great order and decency in conducting them. The old men sit in the foremost rank, the warriors in the next, and the women and children in the hindmost. The business of the women is to take exact notice of what passes; imprint it in their memories, for they have no writing, and communicate it to their children. They are the records of the council, and they preserve tradition of the stipulations in treaties a hundred years back; which, when we compare with our writings, we always find

exact. He that would speak, rises. The rest observe a profound silence. When he has finished, and sits down, they leave him five or six minutes to recollect, that if he has omitted any thing he intended to say, or has any thing to add, he may rise again and deliver it. To interrupt another, even in common conversation, is reckoned highly indecent.

The politeness of these savages in conversation is, indeed, carried to excess; since it does not permit them to contradict, or deny, the truth of what is asserted in their presence. By these means they, indeed, avoid disputes; but then it becomes difficult to know their minds, or what impression you make upon them. The missionaries, who have attempted to convert them to Christianity, all complain of this, as one of the great difficulties of their mission. The Indians hear, with patience, the truths of the gospel explained to them, and give their usual tokens of assent and approbation; but this by no means implies conviction: it is mere civility.

When any of them come into our towns, our people are apt to crowd round them, gaze upon them, and incommode them when they desire to be private; this they esteem great rudeness, and the effect of the want of instruction in the rules of civility, and good manners. "We have," say they, "as much curiosity as you; and when you come into our towns, we wish for opportunities of looking at you; but for this purpose we hide ourselves behind bushes, where you are to pass, and never intrude ourselves into your company."

Their

Their manner of entering one another's villages has likewise its rules. It is reckoned uncivil in travelling strangers to enter a village abruptly, without giving notice of their reproach. Therefore, as soon as they arrive within hearing, they stop and hollow, remaining there till invited to enter. Two old men usually come out to them, and lead them in. There is in every village a vacant dwelling, called the *strangers-house*. Here they are placed, while the old men go round from hut to hut, acquainting the inhabitants that strangers are arrived, who are, probably, hungry and weary; and every one sends them what he can spare of victuals, and skins to repose on. When the strangers are refreshed, pipes and tobacco are brought; and then, but not before, conversation begins, with inquiries who they are, whither bound, what news, &c. and it usually ends with offers of service; if the strangers have occasion for guides, or any necessaries for continuing their journey; and nothing is exacted for the entertainment.

The same hospitality, esteemed among them as a principal virtue, is practised by private persons; of which Conrad Weiser, a celebrated interpreter of the Indian languages, gave Dr Franklin the following instance. He had been naturalized among the Six-Nations, and spoke well the Mohock language. In going through the Indian country, to carry a message from our governor to the council at Onondaga, he called at the habitation of Canassetego, an old acquaintance, who embraced him, spread furs for him to sit on, placed before him some boiled beans and venison, and mixed some rum and water for his

drink. When he was well refreshed, and had lit his pipe, Canassetego began to converse with him: asked how he had fared the many years since they had seen each other, whence he then came, what had occasioned the journey, &c. Conrad answered all his questions; and when the discourse began to flag, the Indian, to continue it, said, "Conrad, you have lived long among the white people, and know something of their customs; I have been sometimes at Albany, and have observed that once in seven days they shut up their shops, and assemble all in the great house; tell me what it is for?—What do they do there?" "They meet there," says Conrad "to hear and learn *good things*." "I do not doubt," says the Indian, "that they tell you so; they have told me the same: but I doubt the truth of what they say, and I will tell you my reasons. I went lately to Albany to sell my skins, and buy blankets, knives, powder, rum, &c. You know I generally used to deal with Hans Hanson; but I was a little inclined, this time, to try some other merchants. However, I called first upon Hans, and asked him what he would give for beaver. He said he could not give more than 4s. a pound; but (says he) I cannot talk on business now; this is the day when we meet together to learn *good things*, and I am going to the meeting. So, I thought to myself, since I cannot do any business to-day, I may as well go to the meeting too; and I went with him.—There stood up a man in black, and began to talk to the people, very angrily. I did not understand what he said; but perceiving that he looked much at me and at Hanson, I imagined he was
angry

angry at seeing me there: so I went out, sat down near the house, struck fire, and lit my pipe, waiting till the meeting should break up. I thought, too, that the man had mentioned something of beaver, and I suspected that it might be the subject of their meeting. So when they came out, I accosted my merchant.—Well, Hans, (said I) I hope you have agreed to give more than 4s. a pound?" "No, (says he) I cannot give so much, I cannot give more than 3s. 6d." "I then spoke to several other dealers, but they all sung the same song, three and six-pence, three and six-pence. This made it clear to me that my suspicion was right; and that whatever they pretended of meeting to learn *good things*, the real purpose was, to consult how to cheat Indians in the price of beaver. Consider but a little, Conrad, and you must be of my opinion. If they met so often to learn *good things*, they certainly would have learned some before this time. But they are still ignorant. You know our practise. If a white man, in travelling through our country, enters one of our cabins, we all treat him as I treat you; we dry him if he is wet, we warm him if he is cold, and give him meat and drink, that he may allay his thirst and hunger; and we spread soft furs for him to rest and sleep on: we demand nothing in return. But if I go into a white-man's house at Albany, and ask for victuals and drink, they say, Where is your money? And if I have none, they say, Get out, you Indian dog. You see they have not yet learned those little *good things* that we need no meeting to be instructed in; because our mothers taught them to us when we were children; and, therefore, it is impossible

their meetings should be, as they say, for any such purpose, or have any such effect; they are only to contrive *the cheating of Indians in the price of beaver.*"

CHAP. IX.

Of the Peopling of America—Old and New-Continents supposed to have been formerly joined—At present separated only by a narrow Strait—Conjectures concerning the first Migrations into the New-Continent—Mr. Pennant's opinion—Customs, &c. common to the eastern Asiatics and the Americans—Brute Creation migrated by the same Route.

THE questions which now present themselves to our notice are, From what part of the Old-World America has, most probably, been peopled?—And how was this peopling accomplished?—

Few *questions* in the history of mankind have been more agitated than these.—Philosophers, and men of learning and ingenuity, have been speculating upon *them*, ever since the discovery of the American-Islands, by Christopher Columbus.—But notwithstanding all the labours of Acosta, of Grotius, and of many other writers of eminence, the subject still affords an ample field for the researches of the man of science, and for the fancies of the theorist.

Discoveries, long ago made, inform us, that an intercourse between the Old-Continent and
Americ

America might be carried on, with facility, from the north-west extremities of Europe and the north-east boundaries of Asia. In the ninth century the Norwegians discovered Greenland, and planted a colony there. The communication with that country was renewed in the last century by Moravian missionaries, in order to propagate their doctrines in that bleak and uncultivated region. By them we are informed that the north-west coast of Greenland is separated from America by a very narrow strait; that at the bottom of the bay it is highly probable that they are united; that the Esquimaux of America perfectly resemble the Greenlanders, in their aspect, dress, and mode of living; and that a Moravian missionary, well acquainted with the language of Greenland, having visited the country of the Esquimaux, found, to his astonishment, that they spoke the same language with the Greenlanders, and were, in every respect, the same people. The same species of animals, too, are found in the contiguous regions. The bear, the wolf, the fox, the hare, the deer, the roebuck, the elk, frequent the forests of North-America, as well as those in the north of Europe.

Other discoveries have proved, that if the two continents of Asia and America be separated at all, it is only by a narrow strait. From this part of the Old-Continent, also, inhabitants may have passed into the New; and the resemblance between the Indians of America and the eastern inhabitants of Asia, would induce us to conjecture that they have a common origin. This is the opinion adopted by Dr Robertson, in his
History

History of America, where we find it accompanied with the following narrative.

“ While those immense regions which stretched eastward from the river Oby to the sea of Kamtschatka were unknown, or imperfectly explored, the north-east extremities of our hemisphere were supposed to be so far distant from any part of the New-World, that it was not easy to conceive how any communication should have been carried on between them. But the Russians, having subjected the western part of Siberia to their empire, gradually extended their knowledge of that vast country, by advancing towards the east into unknown provinces. These were discovered by hunters in their excursions after game, or by soldiers employed in levying the taxes; and the court of Moscow estimated the importance of those countries only by the small addition which they made to its revenue. At length, Peter the Great ascended the Russian throne: His enlightened, comprehensive mind, intent upon every circumstance that could aggrandize his empire, or render his reign illustrious, discerned consequences of those discoveries, which had escaped the observation of his ignorant predecessors. He perceived, that, in proportion as the regions of Asia extended towards the east, they must approach nearer to America; that the communication between the two continents, which had long been searched for in vain, would probably be found in this quarter; and that, by opening this intercourse, some part of the wealth and commerce of the western world might be made to flow into his dominions by a new channel. Such an object suited a genius that delighted in

in grand schemes. Peter drew up instructions with his own hand for prosecuting this design, and gave orders for carrying it into execution.

“ His successors adopted his ideas, and pursued his plan. The officers whom the Russian court employed in this service, had to struggle with so many difficulties, that their progress was extremely slow. Encouraged by some faint traditions among the people of Siberia concerning a successful voyage in the year 1648 round the north-east promontory of Asia, they attempted to follow the same course. Vessels were fitted out, with this view, at different times, from the rivers Lena and Kolyma; but in a frozen ocean, which nature seems not to have destined for navigation, they were exposed to many disasters, without being able to accomplish their purpose. No vessel fitted out by the Russian court ever doubled this formidable cape; we are indebted for what is known of those extreme regions of Asia, to the discoveries made in excursions by land. In all those provinces, an opinion prevails, that countries of great extent and fertility lie at no considerable distance from their own coasts. These the Russians imagined to be part of America; and several circumstances concurred not only in confirming them in this belief, but in persuading them that some portion of that continent could not be very remote. Trees of various kinds, unknown in those naked regions of Asia, are driven upon the coast by an easterly wind. By the same wind floating ice is brought thither in a few days; flights of birds arrive annually from the same quarter; and a tradition obtains among the inhabitants, of an intercourse
formerly

formerly carried on with some countries situated to the east.

“ After weighing all these particulars, and comparing the position of the countries in Asia which they had discovered, with such parts in the north-west of America as were already known; the Russian court formed a plan, which would have hardly occurred to any nation less accustomed to engage in arduous undertakings, and to contend with great difficulties. Orders were issued to build two vessels at Ochotz, in the sea of Kamtschatka, to sail on a voyage of discovery. Though that dreary uncultivated region furnished nothing that could be of use in constructing them but some larch-trees; though not only the iron, the cordage, the sails, and all the numerous articles requisite for their equipment, but the provisions for victualling them, were to be carried through the immense deserts of Siberia, along rivers of difficult navigation, and roads almost impassable, the mandate of the sovereign, and the perseverance of the people, at last surmounted every obstacle. Two vessels were finished; and, under the command of captains Behring and Tschirikow, sailed from Kamtschatka in quest of the New-World, in a quarter where it had never been approached. They shaped their course towards the east; and though a storm soon separated the vessels, which never rejoined, and many disasters befel them, the expectations from the voyage were not altogether frustrated. Each of the commanders discovered land, which to them appeared to be part of the American continent; and, according to their observations, it seems to be situated within a few degrees

degrees of the north-west coast of California. Each set some of his people ashore: but in one place the inhabitants fled as the Russians approached; in another, they carried off those who landed, and destroyed their boats. The violence of the weather, and the distress of their crews, obliged both to quit this inhospitable coast. In their return they touched at several islands, which stretch in a chain from east to west between the country which they had discovered and the coast of Asia. They had some intercourse with the natives, who seemed to them to resemble the North-Americans. They presented to the Russians the calumet, or pipe of peace, which is a symbol of friendship universal among the people of North-America, and an usage of arbitrary institution peculiar to them."

The more recent and accurate discoveries of that illustrious navigator Cooke, and of his successor Clerke, have brought the matter still nearer to certainty. The sea, from the south of Behring's Straits to the crescent of isles between Asia and America, is very shallow. It deepens from these straits (as the British seas do from those of Dover) till soundings are lost in the Pacific-Ocean; but that does not take place but to the south of the isles. Between them and the straits is an increase from 12 to 54 fathoms, except only off St Thaddeus-Nofs, where there is a channel of greater depth. From the volcanic disposition, it has been judged probable, not only that there was a separation of the continents at the straits of Behring, but that the whole space from the isles to that small opening had once been occupied by land; and that the fury of the watery element, actuated

actuated by that of fire, had, in most remote times, subverted and overwhelmed the tract, and left the islands to serve as monumental fragments.

Without adopting all the fancies of Buffon, there can be no doubt, as the Abbé Clavigero observes, that our planet has been subject to great vicissitudes since the deluge. Ancient and modern histories confirm the truth which Ovid has sung in the name of Pythagoras:

*Vidi ego quod fuerat quondam solidissima tellus,
Esse fretum; vidi factas ex æquore terras.*

At present, they plough those lands over which ships, formerly, sailed, and now they sail over lands which were, formerly, cultivated: earthquakes have swallowed some lands, and subterraneous fires have thrown up others: the rivers have formed new soil with their mud: the sea, retreating from the shores, has lengthened the land in some places, and advancing in others has diminished it; it has separated some territories which were formerly united, and formed new straits and gulphs. We have examples of all these revolutions in the past century. Sicily was united to the continent of Naples, as Eubœa, now the Black-Sea, was to Bœotia. Diodorus, Strabo, and other ancient authors, say the same thing of Spain, and of Africa, and affirm, that by a violent eruption of the ocean upon the land between the mountains Abyla and Calpe, that communication was broken, and the Mediterranean-Sea was formed. Among the people of Ceylon there is a tradition that a similar irruption of the sea separated their island from the peninsula
of

of India. The same thing is believed by those of Malabar with respect to the isles of Maldivia, and with the Malaysans with respect to Sumatra. It is certain, says the count de Buffon, that in Ceylon the earth has lost 30 or 40 leagues, which the sea has taken from it; on the contrary, Tongres, a place of the Low-Countries, has gained 30 leagues of land from the sea. The northern part of Egypt owes its existence to inundations of the Nile. The earth which this river has brought from the inland countries of Africa, and deposited in its inundations, has formed a soil of more than 25 cubits of depth. In like manner, adds the above author, the province of the Yellow-River in China, and that of Louisiana, have only been formed of the mud of rivers. Pliny, Seneca, Diodorus, and Strabo, report innumerable examples of similar revolutions, which we omit, that our dissertation may not become too prolix; as also many modern revolutions, which are related in the theory of the earth of the Count de Buffon, and other authors. In South America, all those who have observed with philosophic eyes the peninsula of Yucatan, do not doubt that that country has once been the bed of the sea; and, on the contrary, in the channel of Bahama, many indications show the island of Cuba to have been once united to the continent of Florida. In the strait which separates America from Asia many islands are found, which probably were the mountains belonging to that tract of land which we suppose to have been swallowed up by earthquakes; which is made more probable by the multitude of volcanoes which we know of in the peninsula

L of

of Kamtschatka. It is imagined, however, that the sinking of that land, and the separation of the two continents, has been occasioned by those great and extraordinary earthquakes mentioned in the histories of the Americans, which formed an æra almost as memorable as that of the deluge. The histories of the Toltecas fix such earthquakes in the year I Tecpatl; but as we know not to what century that belonged; we can form no conjecture of the time that great calamity happened. If a great earthquake should overwhelm the isthmus of Sucz, and there should be at the same time as great a scarcity of historians as there were in the first ages after the deluge, it would be doubted, in 300 or 400 years after, whether Asia had ever been united by that part of Africa; and many would firmly deny it.

Whether that great event, the separation of the continents, took place before or after the population of America, it is impossible for us to determine: but we are indebted to the above-mentioned navigators for settling the long dispute about the point from which it was effected. Their observations prove, that in one place the distance between continent and continent is only 39 miles, not (as the author of the *Recherches Philosophiques sur les Americains* would have it) 800 leagues. This narrow strait has also in the middle two islands, which would greatly facilitate the migration of the Asiatics into the New-World, supposing that it took place in canoes after the convulsion which rent the two continents asunder. Besides, it may be added, that these straits are, even in the summer, often filled with ice; in winter, often frozen. In either
case

case, mankind might find an easy passage; in the last, the way was extremely ready for quadrupeds to cross and stock the continent of America. But where, from the vast expanse of the north-eastern world, to fix on the first tribes who contributed to people the New-Continent, now inhabited almost from end to end, is a matter that baffles human reason. The learned may make bold and ingenious conjectures, but plain good sense cannot always accede to them.

As mankind increased in numbers, they naturally protruded one another forward. Wars might be another cause of migrations. There appears no reason why the Asiatic north might not be an *officina virorum*, as well as the European. The overteeming country, to the east of the Riphæan-Mountains, must find it necessary to discharge its inhabitants: the first great wave of people was forced forward by the next to it, more tumid and more powerful than itself: successive and new impulses continually arriving, short rest was given to that which spread over a more eastern tract; disturbed again and again, it covered fresh regions; at length, reaching the farthest limits of the Old-World, found a new one, with ample space to occupy unmolested for ages; till Columbus cursed them by a discovery, which brought again new sins and new deaths to both worlds.

“ The inhabitants of the New-World (Mr Pennant observes), do not consist of the offspring of a single nation: different people, at several periods, arrived there; and it is impossible to say, that any one is now to be found on the ori-

ginal spot of its colonization. It is impossible, with the lights which we have so recently received, to admit that America could receive its inhabitants (at least the bulk of them) from any other place than eastern Asia. A few proofs may be added, taken from customs or dresses common to the inhabitants of both worlds; some have been long extinct in the old, others remain in both in full force.

“ The custom of scalping was a barbarism in use with the Scythians, who carried about them, at all times, this savage mark of triumph: they cut a circle round the neck, and stripped off the skin, as they would that of an ox. A little image, found among the Kalmucs, of a Tartarian deity, mounted on a horse, and sitting on a human skin, with scalps pendant from the breast, fully illustrates the custom of the Scythian progenitors, as described by the Greek historian. This usage, as we well know, by horrid experience, is continued to this day in America. The ferocity of the Scythians to their prisoners extended to the remotest part of Asia. The Kamtschatkans, even at the time of their discovery by the Russians, put their prisoners to death by the most lingering and excruciating inventions; a practice in full force to this very day among the aboriginal Americans. A race of the Scythians were styled *Anthropophagi*, from their feeding on human flesh. The people of Nootka-Sound still make a repast on their fellow-creatures; but what is more wonderful, the savage allies of the British army have been known to throw the mangled limbs of the French prisoners into the hor-

horrible cauldron, and devour them with the same relish as those of a quadruped.

“ The Scythians were said, for a certain time, annually to transform themselves into wolves, and again to resume the human shape. The new discovered Americans about Nootka-Sound, at this time, disguise themselves in dresses made of skins of wolves, and other wild beasts, and wear even the heads fitted to their own, These habits they use in the chase, to circumvent the animals of the field. But would not ignorance or superstition ascribe to a supernatural metamorphosis these temporary expedients to deceive the brute creation?

“ In their marches, the Kamtschatkans never went abreast, but followed one another in the same track. The same custom is exactly observed by the Americans.

“ The Tungusi, the most numerous nation resident in Siberia, prick their faces with small punctures, with a needle, in various shapes; then rub into them charcoal, so that the marks become indelible. This custom is still observed in several parts of America. The Indians on the back of Hudson's Bay, to this day, perform the operation exactly in the same manner, and puncture the skin into various figures; as the natives of New-Zeland do at present, and as the ancient Britons did with the herb *glastum*, or woad; and the Virginians, on the first discovery of that country by the English.

“ The Tonguusi use canoes made of birch-bark, distended over ribs of wood, and nicely sewed together. The Canadian, and many other American nations, use no other sort of boats

The paddles of the Tungusi, are broad at each end; those of the people near Cook's river, and of Oonalascha, are of the same form.

“ In burying of the dead, many of the American nations place the corpse at full length, after preparing it according to their customs; others place it in a sitting posture, and lay by it the most valuable cloathing, wampum, and other matters. The Tartars did the same: and both people agree in covering the whole with earth, so as to form a tumulus, barrow, or carnedd.

“ Some of the American nations hang their dead in trees. Certain of the Tungusi observe a similar custom.

“ We can draw some analogy from dress; conveniency in that article must have been consulted on both continents, and originally the materials must have been the same, the skins of birds and beasts. It is singular that the conic bonnet of the Chinese should be found among the people of Nootka. I cannot give into the notion, that the Chinese contributed to the population of the New-World; but we can, readily, admit that a shipwreck might furnish those Americans with a pattern for that part of the dress.

“ In respect to the features and form of the human body, almost every tribe found along the western coast has some similitude to the Tartar nations, and, still, retain the little eyes, small noses, high cheeks, and broad faces. They vary in size, from the lusty Calmucs to the little Nogaian. The internal Americans, such as the Five-Indian nations, who are tall of body, robust in make, and of oblong faces, are derived from a variety among the Tartars themselves. The
fine

race of Tschutski seems to be the stock from which those Americans are derived. The Tschutski, again from that fine race of Tartars the Kabardinski, or inhabitants of Kabarda.

“ But, about Prince William’s-sound begins a race chiefly distinguished by their dress, their canoes, and instruments of the chase, from the tribes to the south of them. Here commences the Esquimaux people, or the race known by that name in the high latitudes of the eastern side of the continent. They may be divided into two varieties. At this place they are of the largest size. As they advance northward, they decrease in height, till they dwindle into the dwarfish tribes which occupy some of the coasts of the Icy-Sea, and the maritime parts of Hudson’s-Bay, of Greenland, and Terra de-Labrador. The famous Japanese map places some islands seemingly within the straits of Behring, on which is bestowed the title of *Ya-Zue*, or the Kingdom of the Dwarfs. Does not this in some manner authenticate the chart, and give us reason to suppose that America was not unknown to the Japanese; and that they had (as is mentioned by Kæmpfer and Charlevoix) made voyages of discovery, and, according to the last, actually wintered on the Continent? That they might have met with with the Esquimaux is very probable; whom in comparison of themselves, they might justly distinguish by the name of *dwarfs*. The reason of their low stature is very obvious: these dwell in a most severe climate, amidst penury of food; the former in one much more favourable, abundant in provisions; circumstances that tend to prevent the degeneracy of the human frame.

frame. At the island of Oonalascha, a dialect of the Esquimaux is in use, which was continued along the whole coast from thence northward.

The continent which stocked America with the human race, is supposed, by Mr. Pennant, to have poured in their brute creation, through the same passage. Very few quadrupeds continued in the peninsula of Kamtschatka; Mr. Pennant enumerates only 25 which are inhabitants of land: all the rest persisted in their migration, and fix their residence in the New-World. Seventeen of the Kamtschatkan quadrupeds are found in America: others are common only to Siberia, or Tartary, having, for unknown causes, entirely evacuated Kamtschatka, and divided themselves between America and the parts of Asia above cited. Multitudes again, have deserted the Old-World, even to an individual, and, and fixed their seats at distances most remote from the spot from which they took their departure; from mount Ararat, the resting place of the ark, in a central part of the Old-World, and excellently adapted for the dispersion of the animal creation, to all its parts. “We need not be startled (says Mr. Pennant) at the vast journeys many of the quadrupeds took to arrive at their present seats. Might not numbers of species have found convenient abodes in the vast alps of Asia, instead of wandering to the Cordilleras of Chili? or might not others have been contented with the boundless plains of Tartary, instead of travelling thousands of miles to the extensive flats of Pampas?—To endeavour to elucidate common difficulties is certainly a trouble worthy of the philosopher, and of the
the

the divine; not to attempt would be a criminal indolence, a neglect to

Vindicate the ways of God to man.

But there are multitudes of points beyond the human ability to explain, and yet are truths undeniable: the facts are indisputable, notwithstanding the causes are concealed. In such cases, faith must be called into our relief. It would, certainly, be the height of folly to deny to that Being who broke open the great fountains of the deep to effect the deluge--and afterwards, to compell the dispersion of mankind to people the globe, directed the confusion of languages--powers inferior in their nature to these. After these wondrous proofs of omnipotency, it will be absurd to deny the possibility of infusing instinct into the brute creation. *Deus est anima brutorum;* "God himself is the soul of brutes:" his pleasure must have determined their will, and directed several species, and even whole genera, by impulse irresistible, to move by slow progression to their destined regions. But for that, the llama and the pacos might still have inhabited the heights of Armenia, and some more neighbouring Alps, instead of labouring to gain the distant Peruvian-Andes; the whole genus of armadillos, slow of foot, would never have quitted the torrid zone of the Old-World for that of the New; and the whole tribe of monkeys would have gambolled together in the forests of India, instead of dividing their residence between the shades of Indostan, and the deep forests of the Brasils: lions and tigers might have infested the hot parts
of

of the New-World, as the first do the deserts of Africa, and the last the provinces of Asia; or the pantherine animals of South-America might have remained additional scourges with the savage beasts of those ancient continents. The Old-World would have been overstocked with animals; the New remained an unanimated waste! or both have contained an equal portion of every beast of the earth. Let it not be objected, that animals bred in a southern climate, after the descent of their parents from the ark, would be unable to bear the frost and snow of the rigorous north, before they reached South-America, the place of their final destination. It must be considered, that the migration must have been the work of ages; that in the course of their progress each generation grew hardened to the climate it had reached; and that, after their arrival in America, they would again be gradually accustomed to warmer and warmer climates, in their removal from north to south, as they had in the reverse, or from south to North. Part of the tigers still inhabit the eternal snows of Ararat, and multitudes of the very same species live, but with exalted rage, beneath the line, in the burning soil of Borneo, or Sumatra; but neither lions or tigers ever migrated into the New-World. A few of the first are found in India and Persia, but they are found in numbers only in Africa. The tiger extends as far north as western Tartary, in lat. 40. 50, but never has reached America."

In fine, the conjectures of the learned respecting the vicinity of the Old and New-World are now, by the discoveries of late great navigators, lost in conviction; and, in the place of imaginary

nary

nary hypotheses, the real place of migration is almost incontrovertibly pointed out. Some (from a passage in Plato) have extended over the Atlantic, from the straits of Gibraltar to the coast of North and South-America, an island equal in size to the continents of Asia and Africa; over which had passed as over a bridge, from the latter, men and animals; wool-headed negroes, and lions and tigers, none of which ever existed in the New-World. A mighty sea arose, and, in one day and night, engulfed this stupendous tract, and with it every being which had not completed its migration into America. The whole negro race, and almost every quadruped, now inhabitants of Africa, perished in this critical day. Five only are to be found, at present, in America; and of these only one, the bear, in South-America: Not a single custom, common to the natives of Africa and America, to evince a common origin. Of the quadrupeds, the bear, stag, wolf, fox, and weasel, are the only animals which we can pronounce, with certainty, to be found on each continent. The stag, the fox, and the weasel, have made, also, no farther progress in Africa than the north; but on the same continent the wolf is spread over every part, yet is unknown in South-America, as are the fox and weasel. In Africa and in South-America the bear is very local, being met with only in the north of the first, and on the Andes in the last. Some cause unknown arrested its progress in Africa and impelled the migration of a few into the Chilian-Alps, and induced them to leave unoccupied the vast tract from North-America to the lofty cordilleras.

CHAP. X.

Remains of Antiquity in America.

ALLUSIONS have often been made by travellers, and others, to some remains in America which appeared to owe their original to a people more intimately acquainted with the arts of life than the *savage* tribes which inhabited this continent on its first discovery by the Europeans, or than those which are, at present, scattered through various parts of its extent. In a small work, published in London, in 1787, entitled *Observations on some parts of natural history: to which is prefixed, an account of several remarkable vestiges of an ancient date, which have been discovered in different parts of America.** Part I. the author has collected the scattered hints of Kalm, of Carver, of Filson, and some other travellers, and writers; and has added a plan and description of a regular work, which he supposes to have been a *fortification*, that has been discovered near the confluence of the rivers Ohio and Maskingum. The remains described, or alluded to, in this publication, are characters, or singular marks, which were supposed by some Jesuits, who examined them to be *Tartarian*; furrows, as if the land had been ploughed; a stone wall; mounds of earth, of different forms and sizes; earthen walls, and ditches, &c.

* By Dr. Benjamin-Smith Barton, of Philadelphia.

The mounds of earth are supposed, by the author, to have been designed for different purposes: the *smaller* ones are, evidently, tumuli, or repositories of the dead; and, he thinks, the larger ones, as that at Grave-Creek (a branch of the Ohio); many which are to be seen in Mexico, and in other parts of America, were intended to serve as the bases of temples.

The most curious part of this little work is the description, together with the plan, of the supposed fortification, above alluded to. It is situated on the east side of the river Maskingum, about half a mile above its junction with the river Ohio, nearly in the latitude of 39. 21. and about 170 miles below Fort-Pitt, at the confluence of the rivers Alleghaney and Monaugahela. The town, as it has been, sometimes, called, is a large level, encompassed by walls of a tetragon form; occupying a piece of ground about one quarter of a mile square. These walls are from six to ten feet in height, and from twenty to forty feet in thickness. They are, at present, overgrown with vegetables, of different kinds, and, among others, with trees, some of which are of a very considerable diameter. Each side of the walls is divided, by three chasms, or openings, into four, nearly equal parts; these chasms are directly opposite to each other. Within the walls there are three elevations; the largest of these is of an oblong form, 74 yards long, 44 yards broad, and 6 feet in height: the second is nearly of a similar form, 50 yards long, and 40 broad; the third is, also, an oblong mount, but much smaller. Besides these three elevations, there is a small circular mount, placed nearly in the centre of four small caves; and a “semi-circular

M

cular parapet," which, it is not improbable, may have been designed to guard one of the chafins or openings: this parapet has a small mount. The author observes, that the three elevations "considerably resemble some of the eminences " which have been discovered near the river " Mississippi," of which he has given an account in his publication.

The fortifications (for a distinction has been made between them and the town, but we cannot see with what great propriety) are nearly of the same form as the town. The walls have here, also, openings: and at each of these openings there is one, or more of the small circular mounts.

The pyramid is one of the most conspicuous parts of these singular remains. It is of a circular form; 50 feet in height, 390 feet in circumference; and is surrounded with a ditch, 5 feet deep, and 15 feet wide: externally to the ditch there is a parapet, which is 759 feet in circumference. The pyramid, as well as "the eminences and walls, is now covered with grasses, " and other kinds of vegetables." Besides these, there are several other eminences, of which we do not think it necessary to take any notice, in this place.

The author's opinion concerning these remains is this; that they owe their original to "the Toltecas, or some other Mexican nation," and that these people were, probably, the descendants of the Danes. The first member of this *conjecture* appears not improbable, if we consider the similarity of the Mexican mounts and fortifications, described by Torquemada, by the Abbé Clavigero, and by other authors, to those of which our author has published an account; and,
also,

also, if we consider the tradition of the Mexicans, that they came from the north-west, in which tract great numbers of these remains have been discovered. As to the second member of this conjecture, we think it but feebly supported; although we are not ignorant that Grótius and other writers have endeavoured to prove, that the northern nations of Europe had, actually, some intercourse with America, long before the time of Columbus.

CHAP. XI.

The Ancients supposed to have had some imperfect Notion of a New-World!—Pre ensions of the Welsh to the Discovery of America—Those of the Norwegians better founded—Projects of CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS—his Voyage—Astonishment occasioned by observing the Variation of the Compass—his perious Situation—his Crew ready to mutiny—their Joy on descrying Land—they land on one of the islands of the New-World!—the Continent afterwards discovered.

IT is believed, by many, that the ancients had some imperfect notion of the New-World; and several ancient authors are quoted in confirmation of this opinion. In a book, ascribed to the philosopher Aristotle, we are told that the Carthaginians discovered an island, far beyond the pillars of Hercules, large, fertile, and finely watered, with navigable rivers, but uninhabited. This island was distant a few days

sailing from the continent : its beauty induced the discoverers to settle there ; but the policy of Carthage dislodged the colony, and laid strict prohibition on all the subjects of the state not to attempt any future establishment. This account is also confirmed by an historian of no mean credit, who relates, that the Tyrians would have settled a colony on the newly-discovered island, but were opposed by the Carthaginians for state reasons. The following passage has been quoted, likewise, from Seneca's *Medea*, in confirmation of this notion.

— *Veniunt annis*
Sæcula seris, quibus oceanus
Vincula rerum laxet, & ingens
Pateat tellus, Typhisque novos
De'egat orbes : nec sit terris
Ultima Thule.——

ACT. iii. ver. 375.

The Welsh, fondly, imagine that their country contributed, in 1170, to people the New-World by the adventure of Madoc, son of Owen Gwynedd, who, on the death of his father, sailed there, and colonized part of the country. It is pretended that Madoc made two Voyages : that sailing west, he left Ireland so far to the north, that he came to a land unknown, where he saw many strange things ; that he returned home, and, making a report of the fertility of the newly-discovered country, prevailed on numbers of the Welsh, of each sex, to accompany him, on a second voyage, from which he never returned. The favourers of this opinion assert, that several
Welsh

Welsh words, such as *gwrando*, "to harken, or listen;" the isle of *Croeso*, or "welcome;" *Cape-Breton*, from the name of the British-Island; *gwynndwr*, or, "the white water;" and *pingwin*, or "the bird with the white head;" are to be found in the American language. But likenesses of sound, in a few words, will not be deemed sufficient to establish the fact; especially if the meaning has been evidently perverted: for example, the whole penguin tribe have, unfortunately, not only black heads, but are not inhabitants of the northern hemisphere; the name was also bestowed on them by the Dutch, a *pinguedine*, from their excessive fatness. It may be added, that the Welsh were never a naval people; that the age in which Madoc lived was peculiarly ignorant in navigation; and the most which they could have attempted must have been a mere coasting voyage.

The Norwegians put in for a share of the glory, on grounds rather better than the Welsh. By their settlements in Iceland, and in Greenland, they had arrived within so small a distance of the New-World, that there is a probability of its having been touched at by a people so versed in maritime affairs, and so adventurous, as the ancient Normans were. The proofs are much more numerous than those produced by the British historians; for the discovery is mentioned in several of the Icelandic manuscripts. The period was about the year 1002, when it was visited by one Biorn: and the discovery pursued to greater effect by Lief, the son of Eric, the discoverer of Greenland. It does not appear that they reached farther than Labrador; and

which coast they met with the Esquimaux, on whom they bestowed the name of *Skrlaingués*, or dwarfish people, from their small stature. They were armed with bows and arrows, and had leathern canoes, such as they have at present. All this is probable; nor should the tale of the German, called *Turkil*, one of the crew, invalidate the account. He was, one day, missing; but soon returned, leaping and singing, with all the extravagant marks of joy a *bon vivant* could show on discovering the inebriating fruit of his country, the grape: Torfæus even says, that he returned in a state of Intoxication. To convince his commander, he brought several bunches: and the country, from that circumstance, was named *Vinland*. There appears no reason to doubt of the discovery; it is thought probable, however, that these people reached no farther than the barren country of Labrador. In short, it is from a much later period that we must date the *unequivocal* discovery of America.

TOWARDS the close of the 15th century, Venice and Genoa, being rivals in commerce, in which the former had greatly the superiority, Christopher Colon, or Columbus, a native of Genoa, conceived a project of sailing to the East-Indies by directing his course westward. This design was founded upon a mistake of the geographers, of those days, who placed the eastern parts of Asia immensely too far to the eastward; so that had they been in the right, the shortest way would have been to sail directly westward. Columbus applied, first to his own countrymen; but being rejected by them, he
applied

applied to Portugal, where he met with no better success. Spain was his next resource : here, after eight years attendance, he obtained, in 1492, a fleet of three ships. The largest, a ship of no considerable burden, was commanded by Columbus, as admiral, who gave it the name of *Santa Maria*, out of respect for the Blessed Virgin, whom he honoured with singular devotion. Of the second, called the *Pinta*, Martin Pinzon was captain, and his brother Francis Pilot. The third, named the *Nigna*, was under the command of Vincent Yanez Pinzon. These two were light vessels, hardly superior in burden, or force, to large boats. This squadron, if it merits that name, was victualled for 12 months, and had on board 90 men, mostly sailors, together with a few adventurers, who followed the fortune of Columbus, and some gentlemen of Isabella's court, whom she appointed to accompany him. Though the expence of the undertaking was one of the circumstances which chiefly alarmed the court of Spain, and retarded, so long, the negociation with Columbus, the sum employed in fitting out this squadron did not exceed 4000*l*. As Columbus was deeply impressed with sentiments of religion, he would not set out upon an expedition so arduous, and of which one great object was to extend the knowledge of the Christian faith, without imploring, publicly, the guidance and protection of Heaven. With this view, he, together with all the persons under his command, marched, in solemn procession, to the monastery of Rabida. After confessing their sins, and obtaining absolution, they received the holy sacrament from the hands of
the

the guardian, who joined his prayers to theirs for the success of an enterprise which he had so zealously patronized.

Next morning, being Friday, the third day of August, in the year 1492, Columbus set sail, a little before sun-rise, in presence of a vast crowd of spectators, who sent up their supplications to Heaven for the prosperous issue of the voyage, which they wished, rather than expected. Columbus steered, directly, for the Canary-Islands, and arrived there without any occurrence that would have deserved notice on any other occasion : but, in a voyage of such expectation and importance, every circumstance was the object of attention. The rudder of the Pinta broke loose, the day after she left the harbour, and that accident alarmed the crew, no less superstitious than unskilful, as a certain omen of the unfortunate destiny of the expedition. Even in the short run to the Canaries, the ships were found to be so crazy, and ill appointed, as to be very improper for a navigation which was expected to be both long and dangerous. Columbus refitted them, however, to the best of his power ; and having supplied himself with fresh provisions, he took his departure from Gomera, one of the most westerly of the Canary-Islands, on the sixth day of September.

Here the voyage of discovery may properly be said to begin ; for Columbus, holding his course due west, left, immediately, the usual track of navigation, and stretched into unfrequented and unknown seas. The first day, as it was very calm, he made but little way ; but on the second he lost sight of the Canaries ; and many of the
sailors,

sailors, already dejected and dismayed, when they contemplated the boldness of the undertaking, began to beat their breasts, and to shed tears, as if they were never more to behold land. Columbus comforted them with assurances of success, and the prospect of vast wealth, in those opulent regions whither he was conducting them. He regulated every thing by his sole authority; he superintended the execution of every order; and, allowing himself only a few hours for sleep, he was at all other times upon deck. As his course lay through seas which had not, formerly, been visited, the sounding-line, or instruments for observation, were continually in his hands. After the example of the Portuguese discoverers, he attended to the motion of tides and currents, watched the flight of birds, the appearance of fishes, of sea-weeds, and of every thing that floated on the waves, and entered every occurrence, with a minute exactness, in the journal which he kept. As the length of the voyage could not fail of alarming sailors habituated only to short excursions, Columbus endeavoured to conceal from them the real progress which they made. With this view, though they ran 18 leagues the second day, after they left Gomera, he gave out that they had advanced only 15, and he, uniformly, employed the same artifice of reckoning short, during the whole voyage. By the 14th of September, the fleet was above 200 leagues to the west of the Canary-Isles. There they were struck with an appearance, no less astonishing than new. They observed that the magnetic needle, in their compasses, did not point exactly to the polar star, but varied towards the west;

west ; and, as they proceeded, this variation increased. This appearance, which is now familiar, though it still remains one of the mysteries of nature, into the cause of which the sagacity of man hath not been able to penetrate, filled the companions of Columbus with terror. They were now in a boundless, unknown, ocean, far from the usual course of navigation ; nature itself seemed to be altered, and the only guide which they had left was about to fail them. Columbus, with no less quickness than ingenuity, invented a reason for this appearance, which, though it did not satisfy himself, seemed so plausible to them, that it dispelled their fears, or silenced their murmurs.

He still continued to steer due west, nearly in the same latitude with the Canary-Islands. In this course, he came within the sphere of the trade-wind, which blows, invariably, from east to west, between the tropics, and a few degrees beyond them. He advanced before this steady gale with such uniform rapidity, that it was seldom necessary to shift a sail. When about 400 leagues to the west of the Canaries, he found the sea so covered with weeds, that it resembled a meadow of vast extent ; and in some places they were so thick, as to retard the motion of the vessels. This strange appearance occasioned new alarm and disquiet. The sailors imagined that they were now arrived at the utmost boundary of the navigable ocean : that these floating weeds would obstruct their farther progress, and concealed dangerous rocks, or some large tract of land, which had sunk, they knew not how, in that place. Columbus endeavoured to persuade them, that
what

what had alarmed, ought rather to have encouraged them, and was to be considered as a sign of approaching land. At the same time, a brisk gale arose, and carried them forward. Several birds were seen hovering about the ship, and directed their flight towards the west. The desponding crew resumed some degree of spirit, and began to entertain fresh hopes.

Upon the first of October they were, according to the admiral's reckoning, 770 leagues to the west of the Canaries; but, lest his men should be intimidated by the prodigious length of the navigation, he gave out that they had proceeded only 584 leagues; and, fortunately for Columbus, neither his own pilot, nor those of the other ships, had skill sufficient to correct this error, and to discover the deceit. They had, now, been above three weeks at sea; they had proceeded far beyond what former navigators had attempted, or deemed possible: all their prognostics of discovery, drawn from the flights of birds, and other circumstances, had proved fallacious: the appearance of land, with which their own credulity, or the artifice of their commander, had, from time to time, flattered and amused them, had been altogether illusive, and their prospect of success seemed now to be as distant as ever. These reflections occurred often to men, who had no other object, or occupation, than to reason and to discourse concerning the intention and circumstances of their expedition. They made impression, at first, upon the ignorant and timid, and extending, by degrees, to such as were better informed, or more resolute, the contagion spread, at length, from ship to ship. From
secret

secret whispers and murmurings, they proceeded to open cabals and public complaints. They taxed their sovereign with inconsiderate credulity, in paying such regard to the vain promises and rash conjectures of an indigent foreigner, as to hazard the lives of so many of her own subjects, in prosecuting a chimerical scheme. They affirmed that they had fully performed their duty, by venturing so far in an unknown and hopeless course, and could incur no blame, for refusing to follow, any longer, a desperate adventurer to certain destruction. They contended, that it was necessary to think of returning to Spain, while their crazy vessels were still in a condition to keep the sea, but expressed their fears that the attempt would prove vain, as the wind, which had hitherto been so favourable to their course, must render it impossible to sail in the opposite direction. All agreed that Columbus should be compelled by force to adopt a measure on which their common safety depended. Some of the more audacious proposed, as the most expeditious and certain method for getting rid, at once, of his remonstrances, to throw him into the sea; being persuaded that, upon their return to Spain, the death of an unsuccessful projector would excite little concern, and be inquired into with no curiosity.

Columbus was fully sensible of his perilous situation. He had observed, with great uneasiness, the fatal operation of ignorance, and of fear, in producing disaffection, among his crew; and saw that it was now ready to burst out into open mutiny. He retained, however, perfect presence of mind. He affected to seem ignoran

of their machinations. Notwithstanding the agitation and solicitude of his own mind, he appeared with a chearful countenance; like a man satisfied with the progress which he had made, and confident of success. Sometimes he employed all the arts of insinuation to soothe his men. Sometimes he endeavoured to work upon their ambition, or avarice, by magnificent descriptions of the fame and wealth which they were about to acquire. On other occasions, he assumed a tone of authority, and threatened them with vengeance from their sovereign, if, by their dastardly behaviour, they should defeat this noble effort to promote the glory of God, and exalt the Spanish name, above that of every other nation. Even with seditious sailors, the words of a man, whom they had been accustomed to reverence, were weighty and persuasive; and not only restrained them from those violent excesses which they meditated, but prevailed with them to accompany their admiral for some time longer.

As they proceeded, the indications of approaching land seemed to be more certain, and excited hope in proportion. The birds began to appear in flocks making towards the southwest. Columbus in imitation of the Portuguese navigators, who had been guided in several of their discoveries by the motion of birds, altered his course from due west towards that quarter whither they pointed their flight. But after holding on for several days in this new direction without any better success than formerly, having seen no object for 30 days but the sea and the sky, the hopes of his companions subsided faster than they had risen; their fears revived with additional

nal force; impatience, rage, and despair, appeared in every countenance. All sense of subordination was lost. The officers, who had hitherto concurred with Columbus in opinion, and supported his authority, now took part with the private men: they assembled, tumultuously, on the deck, expostulated with their commander, mingled threats with their expostulations, and required him instantly to tack about, and to return to Europe. Columbus perceived that it would be of no avail to have recourse to any of his former arts, which having been tried so often had lost their effect; and that it was impossible to rekindle any zeal for the success of the expedition among men in whose breasts fear had extinguished every generous sentiment. He saw that it was no less vain to think of employing either gentle or severe measures, to quell a mutiny so general and so violent. It was necessary, on all these accounts, to soothe passions which he could no longer command, and to give way to a torrent too impetuous to be checked. He promised, solemnly, to his men, that he would comply with their request, provided they would accompany him, and obey his commands for three days longer; and if, during that time, land were not discovered, he would then abandon the enterprise and direct his course towards Spain.

Enraged as the sailors were, and impatient to turn their faces again towards their native country, this proposition did not appear to them unreasonable. Nor did Columbus hazard much in confining himself to a term so short. The probabilities of discovering land were now so numerous

and

and promising, that he deemed them infallible. For some days, the sounding line had reached the bottom, and the soil which it brought up indicated land to be at no great distance. The flocks of birds increased; and were composed not only of sea fowl, but of such land-birds as could not be supposed to fly far from the shore. The crew of the Pinta observed a cane floating which seemed to be newly cut, and likewise a piece of timber artificially carved. The sailors aboard the Nigna took up the branch of a tree, with red berries, perfectly fresh. The clouds around the setting sun assumed a new appearance; the air was more mild and warm; and, during night, the wind became unequal and variable. From all these symptoms, Columbus was so confident of being near land, that, on the evening of the 11th of October, after public prayers for success, he ordered the sails to be furled and the ships to lie by, keeping strict watch, lest they should be driven ashore in the night. During this interval of suspense and expectation, no man shut his eyes, all kept upon deck, gazing intently towards that quarter where they expected to discover the land which had been so long the object of their wishes.

About two hours before midnight, Columbus standing on the forecastle, observed a light at a distance, and privately pointed it out to Pedro Gutierrez, a page of the queen's wardrobe, Gutierrez perceived it; and calling to Salcedo, comptroller of the fleet, all three saw it in motion, as if it were carried from place to place. A little after midnight, the joyful sound of *Land! land!* was heard from the Pinta, which kept

a-head of the other ships. But having been so often deceived by fallacious appearances, every man was now become slow of belief; and waited, in all the anguish of uncertainty and impatience, for the return of day. As soon as morning dawned, all doubts and fears were dispelled. From each ship an island was seen about two leagues to the north, whose flat and verdant fields, well stored with wood, and watered with many rivulets presented the aspect of a delightful country. The crew of the *Pinta* instantly began the *Te Deum*, as a hymn of thanksgiving to God; and were joined by those of the other ships, with tears of joy and transports of congratulation. This office of gratitude to Heaven was followed by an act of justice to their commander. They threw themselves at the feet of Columbus, with feelings of self-condemnation mingled with reverence. They implored him to pardon their ignorance, incredulity, and insolence, which had created him so much unnecessary disquiet, and had so often obstructed the prosecution of his well-concerted plan; and passing, in the warmth of their admiration, from one extreme to another, they now pronounced the man whom they had so lately reviled, and threatened, to be a person inspired by Heaven, with sagacity and fortune more than human, in order to accomplish a design so far beyond the ideas and conception of all former ages.

As soon as the sun arose, all their boats were manned and armed. They rowed towards the island with their colours displayed, with warlike music, and other martial pomp. As they approached the coast, they saw it covered with a
multitude

multitude of people, whom the novelty of the spectacle had drawn together, whose attitudes and gestures expressed wonder and astonishment, at the strange objects which presented themselves to their view. Columbus was the first European who set foot in the New world, which he had discovered. He landed in a rich dress, and with a naked sword in his hand. His men followed; and, kneeled down, they all kissed the ground which they had so long desired to see. They, next, erected a crucifix; and, prostrating themselves before it, returned thanks to God for conducting their voyage to such an happy issue.

The above was one of the Bahama-Islands; to which he gave the name of *San Salvador*, and took possession of it in the name of their Catholic majesties. In this first voyage he discovered several other of the Lucayo, or Bahama-Islands, with those of Cuba and Hispaniola. The natives considered the Spaniards as divinities, and the discharge of the artillery as their thunder: they fell prostrate at the sound. The women, however, offered their favours, and courted the embraces of their new guests as men. Their husbands were not-jealous of them; and in the arms of those wantons the companions of Columbus are said, by some authors, to have caught that malady which directs its poison to the springs of life. In a second voyage, many new islands were discovered. In a third, he attained the great object of his ambition, by discovering the continent of America, near the mouth of the river Oroonoko, on the first day of August 1498. His success produced a crowd of adventurers, from all nations; but the year before this, the

northern continent had been discovered by Sebastian Cabot, in the service of Henry VII. of England.

CHAP. XII.

Division of America—its Productions—its different Possessors—Vast Extent of the British Possessions before the late Revolution.

NOTWITHSTANDING the many settlements of the Europeans in this continent, great part of America remains still unknown. The northern continent contains the British colonies of Hudson's-Bay, Canada, and Nova-Scotia: The New-England states, and those of New-York New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, North, and South, Carolina, and Georgia. It contains, also, the Spanish territories of east, and West, Florida, Louisiana, New-Mexico, California, and Mexico. Besides these, there are immense regions to the west, and north, the boundaries of which have never yet been discovered. In such as are in any degree known, dwell the Esquimaux, the Algonquins, the Hurons, the Iroquois, the Cheerake, the Chickasaws, and many other tribes of Indians. In the southern lie the Spanish provinces of Tierra-Firmé, Guiana, Peru, Paraguay, and Chili; together with that of Brasil, belonging to the Portuguese; and the country of Surinam, belonging to the Dutch. Vast tracts, however, in the inland parts are unknown,

known, being comprehended under the general name of *Amazonia*. A large district, also, said to be the residence of a gigantic race of men, lies on the east side of the continent, between the straits of Magellan and the province of Paraguay.

This vast country produces many of the metals, minerals, plants, fruits, trees, and wood to be met with in the other parts of the world, and many of them in greater quantities, and in high perfection. The gold and silver of America have supplied Europe with such immense quantities of those valuable metals, that they are become vastly more common; so that the gold and silver of Europe now bear little proportion to the high price set upon them before the discovery of America.

It also produces diamonds, pearls, emeralds, amethysts, and other valuable stones, which, by being brought into Europe, have contributed, likewise, to lower their value. To these, which are chiefly the productions of Spanish-America, may be added a great number of other commodities, which, though of less price, are of much greater use. Of these are the plentiful supplies of cochineal, indigo, anatto, logwood, brazil, fustic, pimento, lignum vitæ, rice, ginger, cocoa, or the chocolate-nut, sugar, cotton, tobacco, banillas, red-wood, the balsams of Tolu, Peru, and Chili, that valuable article, in medicine, the Jesuit's bark, machoacan, sassafras, sarsaparilla, cassia, tamarinds, hides, furs, ambergrise, and a great variety of woods, roots and plants; to which, before the discovery of America, the Europeans were entire strangers, or which they were forced to buy at an extravagant rate
from.

from Asia and Africa, through the hands of the Venetians and Genoese, who then engrossed the trade of the Eastern-World.

On this continent there grows also a variety of excellent native fruits ; as pine-apples, citrons, lemons, oranges, malicats, figs, grapes, great numbers of culinary, medicinal, and other herbs, roots, and plants, with many exotic productions, which are nourished in as great perfection as in their native soil.

Although the Indians still live in the quiet possession of many large tracts, America, so far as known, is chiefly claimed, and divided into colonies, by three European nations, the Spaniards, English, and Portuguese. The Spaniards, as they first discovered it, have the largest and richest portion, extending from New-Mexico and Louisiana, in North-America, to the Straits of Magellan, in the South-Sea, excepting the large province of Brasil, which belongs to Portugal ; for though the French and Dutch have some forts upon Surinam and Guiana, they scarcely deserve to be considered as proprietors of any part of the southern continent.

Next to Spain, the most considerable proprietor of America was Great Britain, who derived her claim to North-America from the first discovery of that continent by Sebastian Cabot, in the name of Henry VII. *anno* 1497, about six years after the discovery of South-America by Columbus, in the name of the king of Spain. This country was in general called *Newfound-land*; a name which is now appropriated solely to an island upon its coast. It was a long time before the English made any attempt to settle in this country.

country. Sir Walter Raleigh, an uncommon genius and a brave commander, first showed the way, by planting a colony in the southern part, which he called *Virginia*, in honour of his virgin mistress Queen Elizabeth.

The French indeed, from this period until the conclusion of the war before last, laid a claim to, and actually possessed, Canada, and Louisiana; comprehending all that extensive inland country reaching from Hudson's-Bay, on the north, to Mexico and the gulph of the same name, on the south. But, in that war, they were not only driven from Canada and its dependencies, but obliged to relinquish all that part of Louisiana lying on the east side of the Mississippi. And thus the British colonies were preserved, secured, and extended so far, as to render it difficult to ascertain the precise bounds of the empire of Great-Britain in North-America. To the northward, they might have extended their claims quite to the pole itself, nor did any nation seem inclined to dispute the property of this northernmost country with them. From that extremity they had a territory extending, southward, to Cape Florida in the Gulph of Mexico, N. Lat. 25° , and consequently near 4000 miles long in a direct line. And to the westward, their boundaries reached to nations unknown even to the Indians of Canada.

Of the revolution that has since taken place, by which a great part of those territories has been torn from the British empire, the history follows in the next Book.

HISTORY

A General MAP of NORTH AMERICA from the best AUTHORITIES



Discovered by Juan de Blos
Discovered by Aquilar
C. Blauac
C. Mendocin
H. where St. Francis Drake was 7 Weeks
C. Conception
St. Mary I
C. Blauac
Bay Little
R. St. Thomas
C. St. Lawrence
Tropic of Cancer

New Albion
New York
C. Blauac
St. Mary I
C. Blauac
Bay Little
R. St. Thomas
C. St. Lawrence

Land of the Algonquins
Mountain of Light Stones
Teguayo & Quivira
St. Jerome
St. Peter
St. Andrew
St. Joseph
St. Martin
St. Lawrence
C. St. Lawrence

the Head of this River is unknown
This far the Mississippi has been ascended
Hankawent
Paris
Newes
Buffaloes Meadows
Missouri
St. Louis
St. Charles
St. Peter
St. Andrew
St. Joseph
St. Martin
St. Lawrence

HUDSONS BAY
NEW BRUNSWICK
NEW JERSEY
PENNSYLVANIA
DELAWARE
MARIANA
VIRGINIA
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
WEST FLORIDA
FLORIDA
MEXICO

ATLANTIC OCEAN
St. Anne's R.
St. Ann's B.
St. Ann's I.
St. Ann's S.
St. Ann's T.
St. Ann's U.
St. Ann's V.
St. Ann's W.
St. Ann's X.
St. Ann's Y.
St. Ann's Z.

H I S T O R Y

OF THE

American Revolution.

BOOK II.

CHAPTER I.

State and Character of the British Colonies at the end of the War 1763—Cause of the Disturbances—Proceedings in the Colonies, previous to the Commencement of Hostilities.

OF the rise and establishment of this republic, which has given a new face to the western world, a succinct and impartial narrative shall in this article be attempted ; in which, however, we cannot hope entirely to avoid errors, as they are perhaps unavoidable. The accounts from which the historian must derive his information are not yet cleared from the mistakes of prejudice and the fabrications of party ; when they differ, their comparative authenticity is with difficulty ascertained ; and they want, above all, that softening which they can receive from time alone.

The

The beginnings, even of the most celebrated political institutions of the old world, are generally involved in fable and obscurity: The barbarous manners of savage tribes in the early and uncultivated state of society, renders the researches of the historian painful and unsatisfactory. Very different were the circumstances which gave birth to this new republic, which at a future period, bids fair to surpass even the splendor of Rome.

The state of the British colonies at the conclusion of the war in 1763, was such as attracted the attention of all the politicians in Europe. Their flourishing condition at that period was remarkable and striking; their trade had prospered in the midst of all the difficulties and distresses of a war in which they were so nearly and so immediately concerned. Their population continued on the increase, notwithstanding the ravages and depredations that had been so fiercely carried on by the French, and the native Indians in their alliance. They abounded with spirited and active individuals of all denominations. They were flushed with the uncommon prosperity that had attended them in their commercial affairs and military transactions. Hence they were ready for all kind of undertakings, and saw no limits to their hopes and expectations.

As they entertained the highest opinion of their value and importance, and of the immense benefit that Britain derived from its connection with them, their notions were adequately high in their own favour. They deemed themselves, not without reason, entitled to every
kindness

kindness and indulgence which the mother-country could bestow.

Although their pretensions did not amount to a perfect equality of advantages and privileges in matters of commerce, yet in those of government they thought themselves fully competent to the task of conducting their domestic concerns, with little or no interference from abroad. Though willing to admit the supremacy of Great Britain, they viewed it with a suspicious eye and with a marked desire to restrain it within its strict constitutional boundaries.

Their improvements in all the necessary and useful arts did honor to their industry and ingenuity. Though they did not live in the luxury of Europe, they had all the solid and substantial enjoyments of life, and were not unacquainted with many of its elegancies and refinements.

A circumstance much to their praise is, that notwithstanding their peculiar addiction to those occupations of which lucre is the sole object, they were duly attentive to cultivate the field of learning; and they have, ever since their first foundation, been particularly careful to provide for the education of the rising progeny.

Their vast augmentation of internal trade and external commerce, was not merely owing to their position and facility of communication with other parts: it arose also from their natural turn and temper, full of schemes and projects; ever aiming at new discoveries, and continually employed in the search of the means of improving their condition.

Their condition carried them into every quarter from whence profit could be derived. There

O

was

The beginnings, even of the most celebrated political institutions of the old world, are generally involved in fable and obscurity: The barbarous manners of savage tribes in the early and uncultivated state of society, renders the researches of the historian painful and unsatisfactory. Very different were the circumstances which gave birth to this new republic, which at a future period, bids fair to surpass even the splendor of Rome.

The state of the British colonies at the conclusion of the war in 1763, was such as attracted the attention of all the politicians in Europe. Their flourishing condition at that period was remarkable and striking; their trade had prospered in the midst of all the difficulties and distresses of a war in which they were so nearly and so immediately concerned. Their population continued on the increase, notwithstanding the ravages and depredations that had been so fiercely carried on by the French, and the native Indians in their alliance. They abounded with spirited and active individuals of all denominations. They were flushed with the uncommon prosperity that had attended them in their commercial affairs and military transactions. Hence they were ready for all kind of undertakings, and saw no limits to their hopes and expectations.

As they entertained the highest opinion of their value and importance, and of the immense benefit that Britain derived from its connection with them, their notions were adequately high in their own favour. They deemed themselves, not without reason, entitled to every
kindness

kindness and indulgence which the mother-country could bestow.

Although their pretensions did not amount to a perfect equality of advantages and privileges in matters of commerce, yet in those of government they thought themselves fully competent to the task of conducting their domestic concerns, with little or no interference from abroad. Though willing to admit the supremacy of Great Britain, they viewed it with a suspicious eye and with a marked desire to restrain it within its strict constitutional boundaries.

Their improvements in all the necessary and useful arts did honor to their industry and ingenuity. Though they did not live in the luxury of Europe, they had all the solid and substantial enjoyments of life, and were not unacquainted with many of its elegancies and refinements.

A circumstance much to their praise is, that notwithstanding their peculiar addiction to those occupations of which lucre is the sole object, they were duly attentive to cultivate the field of learning; and they have, ever since their first foundation, been particularly careful to provide for the education of the rising progeny.

Their vast augmentation of internal trade and external commerce, was not merely owing to their position and facility of communication with other parts: it arose also from their natural turn and temper, full of schemes and projects; ever aiming at new discoveries, and continually employed in the search of the means of improving their condition.

Their condition carried them into every quarter from whence profit could be derived. There

O

was

was scarcely any part of the American hemisphere to which they had not extended their navigation. They were continually exploring new sources of trade, and were found in every spot where business could be transacted.

To this extensive and incessant application to commerce, they added an equal vigilance in the administration of their affairs at home. Whatever could conduce to the amelioration of the soil they possessed, to the progress of agriculture, or to the improvement of their domestic circumstances, was attended to with so much labour and care, that it may be strictly said that Nature had given them nothing of which they did not make the most.

In the midst of this solicitude and toil in matters of business, the affairs of government were conducted with steadiness, prudence, and lenity, seldom experienced, and never exceeded, in the best regulated countries of Europe.

Such was the situation of the British colonies in general throughout North-America, and of the New-England provinces in particular, when the pacification above-mentioned opened one of the most remarkable scenes that ever commanded the attention of the world.

In treating of the American revolution, it has become a fashion with the English writers to ascribe that event to the successful intrigues of the French government. Instead of contemplating it, with the characteristic philosophy of their country, as the result of a contest between the desire of power, and the abhorrence of oppression, they have sought the origin of the evil in any source rather than their own misconduct;

and

and have endeavoured at once, to hush the reproaches of their political conscience, and to gratify the cravings of their national animosity, in wild conjectures of a scheme formed by their neighbours to divide the British Empire, and in declamatory invectives against the Gallic faith and honour. Thus it has been repeatedly asserted, that the French having long viewed, with equal envy and apprehension, the flourishing state of the colonies which Britain had founded in America, began immediately after the peace of Paris to carry into execution their project for separating those colonies from the mother country. Secret emissaries, it is said, were employed in spreading dissatisfaction among the colonies; and the effects produced by these machinating spirits are described to have been a rapid diminution of that peculiar warmth of attachment, which the inhabitants of North-America had hitherto demonstrated for the mother country; the excitement of a jealousy which led them to view her rather in the light of a sovereign than of a parent; and the introduction of a hostile policy which taught them to examine, with a scrupulous nicety, the nature of those ties that rendered them parts of her empire. That such emissaries were ever employed, is a fact unsupported by any document which the purity of historical truth can admit; and although the effects here described, have certainly appeared, it must be remembered that their appearance followed, but did not precede, the attempts of Britain upon the rights and liberties of America. By mere artifice and address to have alienated the affections of the colonists from their mother country.

country, at the close of a war in which their interests and feelings had been interwoven with more than usual strength and energy, was a task of infinite difficulty; not surely to be accomplished in the short period between the declaration of peace in 1761, and the promulgation of the first obnoxious acts of the British parliament in 1764. But, if we trace these effects to another cause, to a love of liberty, and a quick sense of injury, their appearance will be natural and just; consistent with the American character, and corresponding with the conduct which was displayed in all the vicissitudes that attended the revolt.

In March, 1764, a bill was passed, by which heavy duties were laid on goods imported by the colonists from such West-India Islands as did not belong to Great Britain; at the same time that these duties were to be paid into the exchequer in specie; and in the same session, another bill was framed to restrain the currency of paper money in the colonies themselves. Not only the principle of taxation, but the mode of collection was considered as an unconstitutional and oppressive innovation; from the penalties incurred by an infraction of the acts of parliament, might be recovered in the courts of admiralty, before a single judge (whose salary was the fruit of the forfeitures he decreed) without trial by jury, or any of the other benefits of common law jurisprudence. These acts coming so close to each other threw the whole continent into the utmost ferment. Vehement remonstrances were made to the ministry, and every argument made use of that reason or ingenuity could suggest, but to no purpose. Their reasoning, however, con-
vinced

vinced a great number of people in Britain; and thus the American cause came to be considered as the cause of liberty.

The Americans, finding all argumentation vain, at last united in an agreement to import no more of the manufactures of Great Britain, but to encourage to the utmost of their power every thing of that kind among themselves. Thus the British manufacturers also became a party against the ministry, and did not fail to express their resentment in the strongest terms; but the ministry were not to be so easily daunted, and therefore proceeded to the last step of their intended plan, which was to lay on stamp duties throughout the continent. Previous to this indeed, several regulations were passed in favour of the commerce of the colonies; but they had now imbibed such unfavourable sentiments of the British ministry, that they paid very little regard to any thing pretended to be done in their favour; or if these acts made any favourable impression, it was quickly obliterated by the news of the stamp-act. The reason given for this act, so exceedingly obnoxious, was, that a sum might be raised sufficient for the defence of the colonies against a foreign enemy; but this pretence was so far from giving any satisfaction to the Americans, that it excited their indignation to the utmost degree. They not only asserted that they were abundantly able to defend themselves against any foreign enemy, but denied that the British parliament had any right to tax them at all.

It would be superfluous to enter into any arguments used by the contending parties on this important occasion. It was evident that the matter

was not to be decided by argument, but by force of arms ; and the British ministry, too confident of the authority and power of that country, determined to carry on matters with an high hand, to terrify the colonists into an implicit subjection, or, if that would not do, to compel them to it by force. The stamp-act, after a violent opposition in parliament, was passed, and its reception in America was such as might have been expected. The news, and the act itself, first arrived at Boston, where the bells were muffled and rung a funeral peal. The act was first hawked about the streets with a Death's head, affixed to it, and styled the "Folly of England, and the Ruin of America;" and afterwards publicly burnt by the enraged populace: The stamps themselves were seized and destroyed, unless brought by men of war, or kept in fortified places ; those who were to receive the stamp duties were compelled to resign their offices ; and such of the Americans as sided with government on this occasion, had their houses plundered and destroyed.

Though these outrages were committed by the multitude, they were first connived at by those of superior rank, and the principles on which they were founded afterwards openly patronized by them ; and the doctrine became general and openly avowed, that Britain had no right whatever to tax the colonies without their own consent.

It was now found absolutely necessary either to yield to the Americans, by repealing the obnoxious statutes, or to enforce them by arms. The ferment had diffused itself universally throughout

throughout the colonies. Virginia first, and after that all the rest of the provinces, declared against the right of Britain to lay on taxes in America; and that every attempt to vest others with this power besides the king, or the governor of the province and his general assembly, was illegal, unconstitutional, and unjust. Non-impotation agreements were every where entered into; and it was even resolved to prevent the sale of any more British goods after the present year. American manufactures, though dearer, as well as inferior in quality to the British, were universally preferred. An association was entered into against eating of lamb, in order to promote the growth of wool; and the ladies with cheerfulness agreed to renounce the use of every species of ornament manufactured in Britain. Such a general and alarming confederacy determined the ministry to repeal some of the most obnoxious statutes; and to this they were the more inclined by a petition from the first American congress, held at New York in the beginning of October 1765.

The stamp-act was therefore repealed, to the universal joy of the Americans, and indeed to the general satisfaction of the English, whose manufactures had begun to suffer very severely in consequence of the American association, against them. The disputes on the subject without doors, however, were by no means silenced, but each party continued to argue the case as violently as ever. The celebrated Dr Benjamin Franklin was, on this occasion examined before the House of Commons; and his opinion was in substance as follows:

“ That

“ That the tax in question was impracticable and ruinous. The very attempt had so far alienated the affection of the colonies, that they behaved in a less friendly manner towards the natives of England than before; considering the whole nation as conspiring against their liberty, and the parliament as willing rather to oppress than to support and assist them. America, in fact, did not stand in any need of British manufactures, having already begun to construct such as might be deemed absolutely necessary, and that with such success, as left no doubt of their arriving in a short time at perfection. The elegancies of dress had already been renounced for manufactures of the American kind, though much inferior; and the bulk of the people, consisting of farmers, were such as could in no way be effected by the want of British commodities, as having every necessary within themselves. Materials of all kinds were to be had in plenty: the wool was fine; flax grew in great abundance; and iron was every where to be met with.”

The doctor also insisted, That “ the Americans had been greatly misrepresented; that they had been traduced as void of gratitude and affection for the parent state; than which nothing could be more contrary to truth. In the war of 1755 they had, at their own expence, raised an army of 25,000 men; and in that of 1739, they assisted the British expeditions against South-America with several thousand men, and had made many brave exertions against the French in North-America. It was said that the war of 1755 had been undertaken in the defence of the colonies; but

but the truth was, that it originated from a contest about the limits between Canada and Nova-Scotia, and in defence of the English rights to trade on the Ohio. The Americans, however, would still continue to act with their usual fidelity; and, were any war to break out in which they had no concern, they would show themselves as ready as ever to assist the parent state to the utmost of their power, and would never fail to manifest their readiness in contributing to the emergencies of government when called to do so in a regular and constitutional manner.

The ministry were conscious, that in repealing this obnoxious act, they yielded to the Americans; and therefore, to support, as they thought, the dignity of Great Britain, it was judged proper to publish a declaratory bill, setting forth the authority of the mother-country over her colonies, and her power to bind them by laws and statutes *in all cases whatever*. This much diminished the joy with which the repeal of the stamp-act was received in America. It was considered as a proper reason to enforce any claims equally prejudicial with the stamp-act, which might hereafter be set up; a spirit of jealousy pervaded the whole continent, and a strong party was formed, watchful on every occasion to guard against the encroachments of the British power.

It was not long before an occasion offered, in which the Americans manifested a spirit of independency; and that instead of being bound by the British legislature in all cases, they would not be controuled by it in the most trivial affairs.

The

The Rockingham ministry had passed an act, provided the troops stationed in different parts of the colonies with such accommodations as were necessary for them. The assembly of New York, however, took upon them to alter the mode of execution prescribed by the act of parliament and to substitute one of their own. This gave very great offence to the new ministry, and rendered them, though composed of those who had been active against the stamp-bill, less favourable to the colonies than in all probability they would otherwise have been. An unlucky circumstance at the same time occurred, which threw every thing once more into confusion. One of the new ministry, Mr. Charles Townshend, having declared that he could find a way of taxing the Americans without giving offence, was called upon to propose his plan. This was by imposing a duty upon tea, paper, painters colours, and glass imported into America. The conduct of the New York assembly, respecting the troops, and that of Boston, which had proceeded in a similar manner, caused this bill to meet with less opposition than otherwise it might have done. As a punishment to the refractory assemblies, the legislative power was taken from that of New York, until it should fully comply with the terms of the act. That of Boston at last submitted with reluctance. The bill for the new taxes was quickly passed, and sent to America in 1768.

A ferment much greater than that occasioned by the stamp-act now took place throughout the continent. The populace renewed their outrages, and those of superior station entered into regular

regular associations against it. Circular letters were sent from Massachusetts colony to all the rest, setting forth the injustice and impropriety of the behaviour of the British legislature. Meetings were held in all the principal towns, in which it was proposed to lessen the consumption of foreign manufactures, by giving proper encouragement to their own. Continual disputes ensued betwixt the governors and general assemblies of their provinces, which were much heightened by a letter from lord Shelburne to governor Bernard of Massachusetts-Bay, containing complaints of the people he governed. The assembly exasperated to the highest degree, charged their governor with having misrepresented them to the court of Britain, required him to produce copies of the letters he had sent; and, on his refusal, wrote letters to the English ministry, accusing him of misrepresentation and partiality, complaining at the same time most grievously of the proceedings of parliament, as utterly subversive of the liberties of America, and the rights of British subjects.

The governor, at a loss how to defend himself, prorogued the assembly; and in his speech on the occasion, gave a loose to his resentment, accusing the members of ambitious designs, incompatible with those of dutiful and loyal subjects. To counteract the circular letter of the province of Massachusetts-Bay, Lord Hillsborough, secretary for the American department, sent another to the governors of the different colonies, reprobating the other as full of misrepresentation, and tending to excite a rebellion against the authority of the parent state.

Matters

Matters now hastened to a crisis. The governor had been ordered to proceed with vigour, and by no means to shew any disposition to yield to the people as formerly. In particular they were desired to rescind that resolution by which they had written the circular letter above mentioned; and, in case of a refusal, it was told them, that they would be dissolved. As this letter had been framed by the resolutions of a former house, they desired, after a week's consultation, that a recess might be granted to consult with their constituents; but this being refused, they came to a determination, 92 against 17, to adhere to the resolution which produced the circular letter. At the same time a letter was sent to Lord Hillsborough, and a message to the governor, in justification of their proceedings. In both they expressed themselves with such freedom as was by no means calculated to accord with the sentiments of those in power. They insisted that they had a right to communicate their sentiments to their fellow subjects upon matters of such importance; complained of the requisition to rescind the circular letter as unconstitutional and unjust; and particularly insisted, that they were represented as harbouring seditious designs, when they were doing nothing but what was lawful and right. At the same time they condemned the late acts of parliament as highly oppressive and subversive of liberty. The whole was concluded with a list of accusations against their governor, representing him as unfit to continue in his station, and petitioning the king for his removal from it.

These

These proceedings were followed by a violent tumult at Boston. A vessel belonging to a capital trader had been seized in consequence of his having neglected some of the new regulations; and being taken under the protection of a man of war at that time lying in the harbour, the populace attacked the houses of the commissioners of excise, broke their windows, destroyed the collector's boats and obliged the customhouse officers to take refuge in Castle William, situated at the entrance of the harbour.

The governor now took the last step in his power to put a stop to the violent proceedings of his assembly, by dissolving it entirely; but this was of little moment. Their behaviour had been highly approved by the other colonies, who had written letters to them expressive of their approbation. After the dissolution of the assembly, frequent meetings of the people were held in Boston, which ended in a remonstrance to the governor, to the same purpose as some of the former; but concluding with a request, that he would take upon him to order the king's ships out of the harbour.

While the disposition of the Bostonians was thus more and more irritated, news arrived that the agent for the colony had not been allowed to deliver their petition to the king; it having been objected, that the assembly without the governor was not sufficient authority. This did not contribute to allay the ferment; and it was further augmented by the news that a number of troops had been ordered to repair to Boston, to keep the inhabitants in awe.

A dread-

P

A dreadful alarm now took place. The people called on the governor to convene a general assembly, in order to remove their fears of the military; who, they said, were to be assembled to overthrow their liberties, and force obedience to laws to which they were entirely averse. The governor replied, it was no longer in his power to call an assembly; having, in his last instructions from England, been required to wait the king's orders, the matter being then under consideration at home. Being thus refused, the people took upon themselves the formation of an assembly, which they called a *convention*. The proceedings and resolutions of this body naturally partook of the temper and disposition of the late assembly; but they went a step farther, and having voted "that there is apprehension in the minds of many of an approaching rupture with France," requested the inhabitants to put themselves in a posture of defence against any sudden attack of an enemy; and circular letters were directed to all the towns in the province, acquainting them with the resolutions that had been taken in the capital, and exhorting them to proceed in the same manner. The town of Hatfield alone refused its concurrence. The convention, however, thought proper to assure the governor of their pacific intentions, and renewed their request that an assembly might be called; but being refused any audience, and threatened with being treated as rebels, they at last thought proper to dissolve of themselves, and sent over to Britain a circumstantial account of their proceedings, with the reason of their having assembled in the manner already mentioned.

Th

The expected troops arrived on the very day on which the convention broke up, and had some houses in the town fitted up for their reception. Their arrival had a considerable influence on the people, and for some time seemed to put a stop to their disturbances; but the spirit of the people was now so much roused, that it was impossible to quench the flame. The late outrageous behaviour in Boston had given the greatest offence in England; and, notwithstanding all the efforts of opposition, an address from both houses of parliament was presented to the king; in which the behaviour of the colony of Massachusetts-Bay was set forth in the most ample manner, and the most vigorous measures recommended for reducing them to obedience. The Americans, however, continued steadfast in the ideas they had adopted. Though the troops had for some time quieted the disturbances, yet the calm continued no longer than they appeared respectable on account of their number; but as soon as this was diminished by the departure of a large detachment, the remainder were treated with contempt, and it was even resolved to expel them altogether. The country people took up arms for this purpose, and were to have assisted their friends in Boston; but before this design could be put in execution, an event happened which put an end to every idea of reconciliation betwixt the contending parties.

On the 5th of March 1770, a scuffle happened between the soldiers and a party of the town's people. The inhabitants poured in from all quarters to the assistance of their fellow-citizens:

a violent tumult ensued, during which the military fired upon the mob, killing and wounding several of them. The whole province now rose in arms, and the soldiers were obliged to retire to Castle William to prevent their being cut in pieces. Let it be remembered, however, to the praise of American virtue, that, on the trial, notwithstanding popular prejudice and apprehension, the captain and six of the men were acquitted, two men only being found guilty of manslaughter. In other respects the determinations of the Americans continued, if possible, more firm than ever, until at last government, determining to act with vigour, and at the same time to behave with as much condescension as possible, without abandoning their principles, repealed all the duties lately laid on, that of tea alone excepted. This was left on purpose to maintain the dignity of the crown of Britain; and it was thought that it could not be productive of any discontent in America, as being an affair of very little moment, the produce of which was not expected to exceed L. 16,000. The opposition, however, were strenuous in their endeavours to get this tax likewise abrogated; insisting that the Americans would consider it only as an inlet to others; and that the repeal of all the rest, without this, would answer no good purpose. The event showed that their opinion was well founded. The Americans opposed the tea-tax with the same violence as they had done all the rest: and at last, on the news that salaries had been settled on the justices of the superior court at Boston, the governor was addressed on the subject; the measure was condemned

demned in the strongest terms ; and a committee selected out of the several districts of the colony appointed to inquire into it.

The new assembly proceeded in the most formal manner to disavow the supremacy of the British legislature ; and accused the parliament of Britain of having violated the natural rights of Americans in a number of instances. Copies of the transactions of this assembly were transmitted to every town in Massachusetts, exhorting the inhabitants to rouse themselves, and exert every nerve in opposition to the iron-hand of oppression, which was daily tearing the choicest fruits from the fair tree of liberty. The disturbances were also greatly heightened by an accidental discovery that Mr Hutchinson, governor of Massachusetts-Bay, had written several confidential letters to people in power in England, complaining of the behaviour of the province, recommending vigorous measures against them, and, among other things, asserting, that “ there must be an abridgment of what is called British liberty.” Letters of this kind had fallen into the hands of the agent for the colony at London. They were immediately transmitted to Boston, where the assembly was sitting, by whom they were laid before the governor, who was thus reduced to a very mortifying situation. Losing every idea of respect or friendship for him as their governor, they instantly dispatched a petition to the king, requesting him to remove the governor and deputy-governor from their places, but to this they not only received no favourable answer, but the petition itself was declared groundless and scandalous.

Matters were now ripe for the utmost extremities on the part of the Americans ; and they were brought on in the following manner. Though the colonies had entered into a non-importation agreement against tea as well as all other commodities from Britain, it had nevertheless found its way into America, though in smaller quantity than before. This was sensibly felt by the East-India Company, who had now agreed to pay a large sum annually to government in recompence for which compliance, and to make up their losses in other respects, they were empowered to export their tea free from any duty payable in Britain ; and in consequence of this permission, several ships freighted with the commodity were sent to North-America, and proper agents appointed for disposing of it. The Americans now perceiving that the tax was thus likely to be enforced whether they would or not determined to take every possible method to prevent the tea from being landed, as well knowing that it would be impossible to hinder the sale should the commodity once be brought on shore. For this purpose the people assembled in great numbers, forcing those to whom the tea was consigned to resign their offices, and to promise solemnly never to resume them ; and committees were appointed to examine the accounts of merchants, and make public tests, declaring such a would not take them, enemies to their country. Nor was this behaviour confined to the colony of Massachusetts-Bay ; the rest of the province entered into the contest with the same warmth and manifested the same resolution to oppose this invasion of their rights.

In the midst of this confusion three ships laden with tea arrived in Boston; but so much were the captains alarmed at the disposition which seemed to prevail among the people, that they offered, providing they could obtain the proper discharges from the tea consignees, custom-house, and governor, to return to Britain without landing their cargoes. The parties concerned, however, though they durst not order the tea to be landed, refused to grant the discharges required. The ships; therefore, would have been obliged to remain in the harbour; but the people apprehensive that if they remained there the tea would be landed in small quantities and disposed of in spite of every endeavour to prevent it, resolved to destroy it at once. This resolution was executed with equal speed and secrecy. The very evening after the abovementioned discharges had been refused, a number of people dressed like Mohawk Indians boarded the ships, and threw into the sea their whole cargoes, consisting of 342 chests of tea; after which they retired without making any further disturbance, or doing any other damage. No tea was destroyed in other places, though the same spirit was every where manifested. At Philadelphia the pilots were enjoined not to conduct the vessels up the river; and at New-York, though the governor caused some tea to be landed under the protection of a man of war, he was obliged to deliver it up to the custody of the people to prevent its being sold.

The destruction of the tea at Boston, which happened in November 1773, was the immediate prelude to the disasters attending civil discord.

Government

Government finding themselves every where insulted and despised, resolved to enforce their authority by all possible means ; and as Boston had been the principal scene of the riots and outrages, it was determined to punish that city in an exemplary manner. Parliament was acquainted by a message from his majesty with the unduifful behaviour of the city of Boston, as well as of all the colonies, recommending at the same time the most vigorous and spirited exertions to reduce them to obedience. The parliament in its address promised a ready compliance ; and, indeed, the Americans seemed now to have lost many of their partisans. It was proposed to lay a fine on the town of Boston equal to the price of the tea which had been destroyed, and to shut up its port by armed vessels until the refractory spirit of the inhabitants should be subdued ; which, it was thought, must quickly yield, as a total stop would thus be put to their trade. The bill was strongly opposed on the same grounds that the other had been ; and it was predicted, that, instead of having any tendency to reconcile or subdue the Americans, it would infallibly exasperate them beyond any possibility of a reconciliation. The petitions against it, presented by the colony's agent, pointed out the same consequence in the strongest terms, and in the most positive manner declared that the Americans never would submit to it ; but such was the infatuation attending every rank and degree of men, that it never was imagined the Americans would dare to resist the parent state openly, but would in the end submit implicitly to her commands. In this confidence,
a third

a third bill was proposed for the impartial administration of justice on such persons as might be employed in the suppression of riots and tumults in the province of Massachusetts-Bay. By this act it was provided, that should any persons acting in that capacity be indicted for murder, and not able to obtain a fair trial in the province, they might be sent by the governor to England, or to some other colony, if necessary, to be tried for the supposed crime.

These three bills having passed so easily, the ministry proposed a fourth, relative to the government of Canada; which, it was said, had not yet been settled on any proper plan. By this bill the extent of that province was greatly enlarged; its affairs were put under the direction of a council in which Roman Catholics were to be admitted; the Roman catholic clergy were secured in their possessions and the usual perquisites from those of their own profession. The council above mentioned were to be appointed by the crown; to be removable at its pleasure; and to be invested with every legislative power, excepting that of taxation.

No sooner were these laws made known in America, than they cemented the union of the colonies almost beyond any possibility of dissolving it. The assembly of Massachusetts-Bay had passed a vote against the judges accepting salaries from the crown, and put the question, Whether they would accept them as usual from the general assembly? Four answered in the affirmative; but Peter Oliver, the chief-justice, refused. A petition against him, and an accusation, were brought before the governor; but the

the latter refused the accusation, and declined to interfere in the matter; but as they still insisted for justice against Mr. Oliver, the governor thought proper to put an end to the matter by dissolving the assembly.

In this situation of affairs, a new alarm was occasioned by the news of the port-bill. This had been totally unexpected, and was received with the most extravagant expressions of displeasure among the populace, and while these continued, the new governor, General Gage, arrived from England. He had been chosen to this office, on account of his being well acquainted with America, and generally agreeable to the people; but human wisdom could not now point out a method by which the flame could be allayed. The first act of his office as governor, was to remove the assembly to Salem, a town 17 miles distant, in consequence of the late act. When this was intimated to the assembly, they replied by requesting him to appoint a day for public humiliation for deprecating the wrath of heaven, but met with a refusal. When met at Salem, they passed a resolution, declaring the necessity of a general congress, composed of delegates from all the provinces, in order to take the affairs of the colonies at large into consideration and five gentlemen remarkable for their opposition to the British measures, were chosen to represent that of Massachusetts-Bay. They then proceeded with all expedition to draw up a declaration, containing a detail of the grievance they laboured under, and the necessity of exerting themselves against lawless power; they set forth the disregard shewn to their petitions, and

th

the attempts of Great Britain to destroy their ancient constitution; and concluded with exhorting the inhabitants of the colony, to obstruct, by every method in their power, such evil designs, recommending at the same time a total renunciation of every thing imported from Great-Britain, till a redress of grievances could be procured.

Intelligence of this declaration was carried to the governor on the very day that it was completed; on which he dissolved the assembly. This was followed by an address from the inhabitants of Salem in favour of those of Boston, and concluding with these remarkable words: "By shutting up the port of Boston, some imagine that the course of trade might be turned hither, and to our benefit; but nature, in the formation of our harbour, forbids our becoming rivals in commerce with that convenient mart, and were it otherwise, we must be dead to every idea of justice, lost to all feelings of humanity, could we indulge one thought to seize on wealth, and raise our fortunes on the ruin of our suffering neighbours."

It had been fondly hoped by the ministerial party at home, that the advantages which other towns of the colony might derive from the annihilation of the trade of Boston, would make them readily acquiesce in the measure of shutting up that port, and rather rejoice in it than otherwise; but the words of the address abovementioned, seemed to preclude all hope of this kind; and subsequent transactions soon manifested it to be totally vain. No sooner did intelligence arrive of the remaining bills passed in the session of 1774, than the cause of Boston became the cause
of

of all the colonies. The port-bill had already occasioned violent commotions throughout them all. It had been reprobated in provincial meetings, and resistance even to the last had been recommended against such oppression. In Virginia, the first of June, the day on which the port of Boston was to be shut up, was held as a day of humiliation, and a public intercession in favour of America, was enjoined. The style of the prayer enjoined at this time was, "that God would give the people one heart and one mind, firmly to oppose every invasion of the American rights." The Virginians, however, did not content themselves with acts of religion. They recommended in the strongest manner, a general congress of all the colonies, as fully persuaded that an attempt to tax any colony in an arbitrary manner, was in reality an attack upon them all, and must ultimately end in the ruin of them all.

The provinces of New York and Pennsylvania, however, were less sanguine than the rest, being so closely connected in the way of trade with Great Britain, that the giving it up entirely appeared a matter of the most serious magnitude, and not to be thought of but after every other method had failed. The intelligence of the remaining bills respecting Boston, however, spread a fresh alarm throughout the continent, and fixed those who had seemed to be the most wavering. The proposal of giving up all commercial intercourse was again proposed; and contributions for the inhabitants of Boston were raised in every quarter; and they every day received addresses commending them for the heroic courage with which they sustained their calamity.

The

The Bostonians on their part were not wanting in their endeavours to promote the general cause. An agreement was framed, which in imitation of former times, they called a Solemn League and Covenant. By this the subscribers most religiously bound themselves to break off all communication with Britain after the expiration of the month of August ensuing, until the obnoxious acts were repealed; at the same time they engaged neither to purchase nor use any goods imported after that time, and to renounce all connection with those who did, or who refused to subscribe to this covenant; threatening to publish the names of the refractory; which at this time was a punishment by no means to be despised. Agreements of a similar kind were almost instantaneously entered into throughout all America. General Gage indeed attempted to counteract the covenant by a proclamation, wherein it was declared an illegal and traitorous combination, threatening with the pains of law such as subscribed or countenanced it. But matters were too far gone for his proclamations to have any effect. The Americans retorted the charge of illegality on his own proclamation, and insisted that the law allowed subjects to meet in order to consider of their grievances, and associate for relief from oppression.

Preparations were now made for holding the general congress so often proposed. Philadelphia, as being the most central and considerable town, was pitched upon for the place of its meeting. The delegates, of whom it was to be composed, were chosen by the representatives of each province, and were in number from two

to

to seven for each colony, though no province had more than one vote. This first congress, which met at Philadelphia, in the beginning of September 1774, consisted of 51 delegates. The novelty and importance of the meeting excited an universal attention; and their transactions were such as could not but tend to render them respectable.

The first act of congress was an approbation of the conduct of Massachusetts-Bay, and an exhortation to continue in the same spirit with which they had begun. Supplies for the suffering inhabitants (whom the operation of the port-bill had reduced to great distress) were strongly recommended; and it was declared, that in case of attempts to enforce the obnoxious acts by arms, all America should join to assist the town of Boston; and, should the inhabitants be obliged, during the course of hostilities, to remove further up the country, the losses they might sustain should be repaired at the public expence.

They next addressed General Gage by letter; in which, having stated the grievances of the people of Massachusetts colony, they informed him of the fixed and unalterable determination of all the other provinces to support their bretheren and to oppose the British acts of parliament; that they themselves were appointed to watch over the liberties of America; and intreated him to desist from military operations, lest such hostilities might be brought on as would frustrate all hopes of reconciliation with the parent state.

The next step was to publish a declaration of their rights. These they summed up in the rights belonging to Englishmen; and particularly insisted, that as their distance rendered it impossible for them to be represented in the British parliament, their provincial assemblies, with the governor appointed by the king, constituted the only legislative power within each province. They would, however, consent to such acts of parliament as were evidently calculated merely for the regulation of commerce, and securing to the parent state the benefits of the American trade; but would never allow that they could impose any tax on the colonies, for the purpose of raising a revenue, without their consent. They proceeded to reprobate the intention of each of the new acts of parliament; and insisted on all the rights they had enumerated as being unalienable, and what none could deprive them of. The Canada act they particularly pointed out as being extremely inimical to the colonies, by whose assistance it had been conquered; and they termed it "An act for establishing the Roman Catholic religion in Canada, abolishing the equitable system of English laws, and establishing a tyranny there." They further declared in favour of a non-importation and non-consumption of British goods, until the acts were repealed by which duties were imposed upon tea, coffee, wine, sugar, and molasses, imported into America, as well as the Boston port-act, and the three others passed in the preceding session of parliament. The new regulations against the importation and consumption of British commodities were then drawn up with great solemnity; and

and they concluded with returning the warmest thanks to those members of parliament who had with so much zeal, though without any success, opposed the obnoxious acts of parliament.

Their next proceedings were, to frame a petition to the king, an address to the British nation, and another to the colonies; all of which were so much in the usual spirited strain of American language for some time past, that it is needless to enter into any particular account of them. It is sufficient to say, that they were all drawn up in a masterly manner, and ought to have impressed the people of England with a more favourable idea of the Americans than they could at that time be induced to entertain.

All this time the disposition of the people had corresponded with the warmest wishes of congress. The first of June had been kept as a fast not only throughout Virginia, where it was first proposed, but through the whole continent. Contributions for the distressed of Boston had been raised throughout America, and people of all ranks seemed to be particularly touched with them. Even those who seemed to be most likely to derive advantage from them, took no opportunity, as has been already instanced in the case of Salem. The inhabitants of Marblehead also shewed a noble example of magnanimity in the present case. Though situated in the neighbourhood of Boston, and most likely to derive benefit from distressed, they did not attempt to take any advantage, but generously offered the use of their harbour to the Bostonians, as well as their wharfs and warehouses, free of all expence

pence. In the mean time the British forces at Boston were continually increasing in number, which greatly augmented the general jealousy and dissatisfaction; the country was ready to rise at a moment's warning; and the experiment was made by giving a false alarm that the communication between the town and country was to be cut off, in order to reduce the former by famine to a compliance with the acts of parliament. On this intelligence, the country people assembled in great numbers, and could not be satisfied until they had sent messengers into the city to enquire into the truth of the report. These messengers were enjoined to inform the town's people, that if they should be so pusillanimous as to make a surrender of their liberties, the province would not think itself bound by such examples; and that Britain, by breaking their original charter, had annulled the contract subsisting between them, and left them to act as they thought proper.

The people in every other respect manifested their inflexible determination to adhere to the plan they had so long followed. The new counsellors and judges were obliged to resign their offices, in order to preserve their lives and properties from the fury of the multitude. In some places they shut up the avenues to the court-houses; and, when required to make way for the judges, replied, that they knew of none but such as were appointed by the ancient usage and custom of the province. Every where they manifested the most ardent desire of learning the art of war; and every individual who could bear

Q 3

arms,

arms was most assiduous in procuring them, and learning their exercise.

Matters at last proceeded to such an height, that General Gage thought proper to fortify the neck of land which joins the town of Boston to the continent. This, though undoubtedly a prudent measure in his situation, was exclaimed against by the Americans in the most vehement manner; but the General, instead of giving ear to their remonstrances, deprived them of all power of acting against himself, by seizing the provincial powder, ammunition, and military stores at Cambridge and Charlestown. This excited such indignation, that it was with the utmost difficulty the people could be restrained from marching to Boston and attacking the troops. Even in the town itself, the company of cadets that used to attend him disbanded themselves, and returned the standard he had as usual presented them with on his accession to the government. This was occasioned by his having deprived the celebrated patriot John Hancock afterwards president of the congress, of his commission as colonel of the cadets. A similar instance happened of a provincial colonel having accepted of a seat in the new council; upon which 24 officers of his regiment resigned their commissions in one day.

In the mean time a meeting was held of the principal inhabitants of the towns adjacent to Boston. The purport of this was publicly to renounce all obedience to the late acts of parliament, and to form an engagement to indemnify such as should be prosecuted on that account

the members of the new council were declared violators of the rights of their country; all ranks degrees were exhorted to learn the use of arms; and the receivers of the public revenue were ordered not to deliver it into the treasury, but to retain it in their own hands till the constitution should be restored, or a provincial congress dispose of it otherwise.

A remonstrance against the fortifications on Boston Neck was next prepared; in which, however, they still declared their unwillingness to proceed to any hostile measures; asserting only as usual their firm determination not to submit to the acts of parliament they had already so much complained of. The governor, to restore tranquillity, if possible, called a general assembly; but so many of the council had resigned their seats, that he was induced to countermand its sitting by proclamation. This measure, however was deemed illegal; the assembly met at Salem; and, after waiting a day for the governor, voted themselves into a provincial congress, of which Mr Hancock was chosen president. A committee was immediately appointed, who waited on the governor with a remonstrance concerning the fortifications on Boston Neck; but nothing of consequence took place, both parties mutually criminating each other. The winter was now coming on, and the governor, to avoid quartering the soldiers upon the inhabitants, proposed to erect barracks for them; but the select-men of Boston compelled the workmen to desist. Carpenters were sent for to New-York, but they were refused; and it was with the utmost difficulty that he could procure winter-lodgings

lodgings for his troops. Nor was the difficulty less in procuring clothes; as the merchants of New-York told him, that they would never supply any article for the benefit of men sent as enemies to their country."

This disposition, known to be almost universal throughout the continent was in the highest degree satisfactory to congress. Every one saw that the ensuing spring was to be the season of commencing hostilities, and the most indefatigable diligence was used by the colonies to be well provided against such a formidable enemy. A list of all the fencible men in each colony was made out especially of those who had served in the former war; of whom they had the satisfaction to find that two-thirds were still alive and fit to bear arms. Magazines of arms were collected, and money provided for the payment of the troops. The governors in vain attempted to stop these proceedings by proclamations; the fatal period was now arrived: and the more the servants of government attempted to repress the spirit of the Americans, the more determined it appeared.

In the mean time the inhabitants of Boston were reduced to great distress. The British troops, now distinguished by the name of the enemy, were absolutely in possession of it; the inhabitants were kept as prisoners, and might be made accountable for the conduct of all the colonies; and various measures were contrived to relieve the latter from such a disagreeable situation. Sometimes it was thought expedient to remove the inhabitants altogether; but this was impracticable without the governor's consent. It was then proposed to set fire to the town at once, after valuing

valuing the houses and indemnifying the proprietors; but this being found equally impracticable, it was resolved to wait some other opportunity, as the garrison were not very numerous, and, not being supplied with necessaries by the inhabitants, might soon be obliged to leave the place. The friends of British government indeed attempted to do something in opposition to the general voice of the people; but after a few ineffectual meetings and resolutions, they were utterly silenced, and obliged to yield to the superior number of the patriots.

CHAP II.

Military Stores seized by the Americans—Skirmish at Lexington—Battle at Bunker's Hill—Crown-Point and Ticonderago taken—Articles of Union between the Colonies—Declaration on taking up Arms—Speech of the Commissioners from Congress to the Indians—Gen. WASHINGTON appointed Commander in Chief—Georgia accedes to the Confederacy.

MATTERS had now proceeded so far that the prospect of reconciliation or friendship with Britain became daily more and more distant. The Americans, therefore, began to seize on the military stores and ammunition belonging to government. This first commenced at New-port in Rhode-Island, where the inhabitants carried off 40 pieces of cannon which had been appointed for the protection of the place; and on
being

being asked the reason of this proceeding, they replied, that the people had seized them lest they should be made use of against themselves. After this the assembly met, and resolved that ammunition and warlike stores should be purchased with the public money.

New-Hampshire followed the example of Rhode-Island, and seized a small fort for the sake of the powder and military stores it contained. In Pennsylvania, however, a convention was held, which expressed an earnest desire of reconciliation with the mother-country; though, at the same time, in the strongest manner declaring, that they were resolved to take up arms in defence of their just rights, and defend to the last their opposition to the late acts of parliament; and the people were exhorted to apply themselves with the greatest assiduity to the prosecution of such manufactures as were necessary for their defence and subsistence, such as salt, saltpetre, gunpowder, steel, &c. This was the universal voice of the colonies, New-York only excepted. The assembly of that province, as yet ignorant of the fate of their last remonstrance, refused to concur with the other colonies in their determination to throw off the British yoke: their attachment, however, was very faint, and by the event it appeared that a perseverance in the measures which the ministry had adopted was sufficient to unite them to the rest.

As the disturbances had originated in the province of Massachusetts-Bay, and *there* continued all along with the greatest violence, to this was the province where the first hostilities were formerly commenced. In the beginning of February

ruary the provincial congress met at Cambridge; and as from every appearance it became daily more evident, that arms must ultimately decide the contest, expertness in military discipline was recommended in the strongest manner, and several military institutions enacted; among which that of the *minute-men* was one of the most remarkable. These were chosen from the most active and expert among the militia; and their business was to keep themselves in constant readiness at the call of their officers; from which perpetual vigilance they derived their title.—It was now easily seen that a slight occasion would bring on hostilities, which could not but be attended with the most violent and certain destruction to the vanquished party; for both were so much exasperated by a long course of reproaches and literary warfare, that they seemed to be filled with the utmost inveteracy against each other.

On the 26th of February General Gage, having been informed that a number of field-pieces had been brought to Salem, dispatched a party to seize them. Their road was obstructed by a river, over which was a draw-bridge. This the people had pulled up, and refused to let it down: upon which the soldiers seized a boat to ferry them over; but the people cut out her bottom. Hostilities would immediately have commenced, had it not been for the interposition of a clergy-man, who represented to the military, on the one hand, the folly of opposing such numbers; and to the people, on the other, that as the day was far spent the military could not execute their design, so that they might without
any

any fear leave them the quiet possession of the draw-bridge. This was complied with; and the soldiers, after having remained for some time at the bridge, returned without executing their orders.

The next attempt, however, was attended with more serious consequences. General Gage having been informed that a large quantity of ammunition and military stores had been collected at Concord, about 20 miles from Boston, and where the provincial congress was sitting, sent a detachment, under the command of Colonel Smith and Major Pitcairn, to destroy the stores, and, as was reported, to seize Messrs. Hancock and Adams, the leading men of the congress. They set out before day-break, on the 19th of April, marching with the utmost silence, and securing every one they met on the road, that they might not be discovered. But notwithstanding all their care, the continual ringing of bells and string of guns as they went along, soon gave them notice that the country was alarmed. About five in the morning they had reached Lexington about 15 miles from Boston, where the militia of the place were exercising. Major Pitcairn called out to them, *disperse you rebels; throw down your arms and disperse*; but, as they still continued in a body, he advanced, discharged his pistol, and ordered his soldiers to fire; who instantly obeyed, and killed and wounded several of the militia: a dispersion of the militia was the consequence. The detachment then proceeded to Concord, where, having destroyed the stores, they fired upon the Americans; and a scuffle ensued, in which several fell

on both sides. The purpose of their expedition being thus accomplished, it was necessary for the king's troops to retreat, which they did through a continual fire kept up on them from Concord to Lexington. Here their ammunition was totally expended; and they would have been unavoidably cut off, had not a considerable reinforcement commanded by Lord Percy met them. The Americans, however, continued their attack with great spirit; and the British would still have been in the utmost danger had it not been for two field-pieces which Lord Percy had brought with him. By these the impetuosity of the Americans was checked, and the British made good their retreat to Boston, with the loss of 273 killed, wounded, and made prisoners: that of the Americans was about 50 killed, 38 wounded and missing.

From the commencement of hostilities, the dispute between great Britain, and the colonies took a new direction. By this engagement the spirits of the Americans were raised; a considerable army was assembled, who formed a line of encampment from Roxbury to Mystic, through a space of about 30 miles; and here they were soon after joined by a large body of Connecticut troops, under General Putnam, an old officer of great bravery and experience. By this formidable force was the town of Boston now kept blocked up. General Gage, however, had so strongly fortified it, that the army powerful as they were, durst not make an attack; while on the other hand, his force was by far too insignificant to meet such an army in the field. But towards the end of May, a considerable

R reinforcement

reinforcement having arrived, with Generals Howe, Burgoyne, and Clinton, he was soon enabled to attempt something of consequence. Some skirmishes in the mean time happened in the islands lying off Boston harbour, in which the Americans had the advantage, and burnt an armed schooner, which her people had been obliged to abandon after she was left aground by the tide. Nothing decisive, however, took place, till the 17th of June. In the neighbourhood of Charlestown, a place on the northern shore of the peninsula on which Boston stands, is an high ground called *Bunker's Hill*, which overlooks and commands the whole town of Boston. In the night of the 16th the provincials took possession of this place; and worked with such indefatigable diligence, that to the astonishment of their enemies, they had before day-light, almost completed a redoubt, with a strong entrenchment reaching half a mile eastward, as far as the river Mystic. After this they were obliged to sustain a heavy and incessant fire from the ships and floating batteries with which Charlestown neck was surrounded, as well as the cannon that could reach the place from Boston; in spite of which, however, they continued their work, and finished it before mid-day. A considerable body of foot was then landed at the foot of Bunker's Hill, under the command of Generals Howe and Pigot; the former being appointed to attack the lines, and the latter the redoubt. The Americans, however, having the advantage of the ground, as well as of their intrenchments, poured down such incessant volleys, as threatened the whole body with destruction;

struction; and General Howe was for a little time left almost alone, all his officers being killed or wounded. The provincials in the mean time had taken possession of Charlestown, so that General Pigot was obliged to contend with them in that place as well as in the redoubt. The consequence was, that he was overmatched; his troops were thrown into disorder; and he would in all probability have been defeated had not General Clinton advanced to his relief; upon which the attack was renewed with such fury, that the provincials were driven beyond the neck that leads to Charlestown. In the heat of the engagement the British troops, in order to deprive the Americans of a cover, set fire to Charlestown, which was totally consumed; and, eventually, the Americans were obliged to retreat over Charlestown neck, and were raked by an incessant fire from the Glasgow man of war, and several floating batteries. The loss on the British side amounted to about 1000, among whom were 19 officers killed and 70 wounded; that of the Americans did not exceed 139 killed, and 314 wounded.

The British troops claimed the victory of this engagement; but it must be allowed that it was dearly bought; and the Americans boasted that the real advantages were on their side, as they had so much weakened the enemy that they durst not afterwards venture out of their entrenchments. Although this was the first time the provincials had been in actual service, they behaved themselves with the spirit of veterans, and by no means merited the appellation of

cowards, with which they were so often branded in Britain.

In other places the same determined spirit of resistance appeared on the part of the Americans. Lord North's conciliatory scheme was utterly rejected both by the assemblies of Pennsylvania and New-Jersey, and afterwards in every other colony. The commencement of hostilities at Lexington determined the colony of New-York, which had hitherto continued to waver, to unite with the rest; and as the situation of New-York renders it unable to resist an attack from the sea, it was resolved, before the arrival of a British fleet, to secure the military stores, send off the women and children, and set fire to the city if it was still found incapable of defence. The exportation of provisions was every where prohibited, particularly to the British fishery on the Banks of Newfoundland, or to such colonies of America as should adhere to the British interest. Congress resolved on the establishment of an army, and of a large paper currency in order to support it. In the inland northern colonies, colonel Easton and Ethan Allen without receiving any orders from congress, or communicating their designs to any body, with a party of only 250 men, surprised the forts of Crown-Point, Ticonderago, and the rest that form a communication betwixt the colonies and Canada. On this occasion 200 pieces of cannon fell into their hands, besides mortars, and a large quantity of military stores, together with two armed vessels, and materials for the construction of others.

After

After the battle of Bunker's Hill, the provincials erected fortifications on the heights which commanded Charlestown, and strengthened the rest in such a manner that there was no hope of driving them from thence; at the same time that their activity and boldness astonished the British officers, who had been accustomed to entertain a mean and unjust opinion of their courage.

The troops, thus shut up in Boston, were soon reduced to distress. Their necessities obliged them to attempt the carrying off the American cattle on the islands before Boston, which produced frequent skirmishes; but the provincials, better acquainted with the navigation of these shores, landed on the islands, destroyed or carried off whatever was of any use, burned the light-house at the entrance of the harbour, and took prisoners the workmen sent to repair it, as well as a party of marines who guarded them. Thus the garrison were reduced to the necessity of sending out armed vessels to make prizes indiscriminately of all that came in their way, and of landing in different places to plunder for subsistence as well as they could.

The congress in the mean time continued to act with all the vigour which its constituents had expected. Articles of confederation and perpetual union were drawn up and solemnly agreed upon; by which they bound themselves and their posterity for ever. These were in substance as follows.

1. Each colony was to be independent within itself, and to retain an absolute sovereignty in all domestic affairs.

R 3

2. Dele-

2. Delegates to be annually elected to meet in congress, at such time and place as should be enacted in the preceding congress.

3. This assembly should have the power of determining war or peace, making alliances; and in short all that power which sovereigns of states usually claim as their own.

4. The expences of war to be paid out of the common treasury, and raised by a poll-tax on males between 16 and 60; the proportions to be determined by the laws of the colony.

5. An executive council to be appointed to act in place of the congress during its recesses.

6. No colony to make war with the Indians without consent of congress.

7. The boundaries of all the Indian lands to be secured and ascertained to them; and no purchases of lands were to be made by individuals, or even by a colony, without consent of congress.

8. Agents appointed by congress should reside among the Indians, to prevent frauds in trading with them, and to relieve, at the public expence, their wants and distresses.

9. This confederation to last until there should be a reconciliation with Britain; or, if that event should not take place, it was to be perpetual.

After the action of Bunker's Hill, however, when the power of Great Britain appeared less formidable in the eyes of America than before, congress proceeded formally to justify their proceedings in a declaration drawn up in terms more expressive, and well calculated to excite attention.

“Were it possible (said they) for men who exercise their reason, to believe that the divine
Author

Author of our existence intended a part of the human race to hold an absolute property in and unbounded power over others, marked out by His infinite goodness and wisdom as the objects of a legal domination, never rightfully resistible, however severe and oppressive; the inhabitants of these colonies might at least require from the parliament of Great-Britain some evidence that this dreadful authority over them had been granted to that body: but a reverence for our Great Creator, principles of humanity, and the dictates of common sense, must convince all those who reflect upon the subject, that government was instituted to promote the welfare of mankind, and ought to be administered for the attainment of that end.

“The legislature of Great-Britain, however, stimulated by an inordinate passion for power, not only unjustifiable, but which they know to be peculiarly reprobated by the very constitution of that kingdom: and despairing of success in any mode of contest where regard should be had to law, truth, or right; have, at length, deserting those, attempted to effect their cruel and impolitic purpose of enslaving those colonies by violence, and have thereby rendered it necessary for us to close with their last appeal from reason to arms. Yet, however blinded that assembly may be, by their intemperate rage for unlimited domination, so to slight justice in the opinion of mankind, we esteem ourselves bound by obligations to the rest of the world to make known the justice of our cause.”

After taking notice of the manner in which their ancestors left Britain, the happiness attend-
ing

ing the mutual friendly commerce betwixt that country and her colonies, and the remarkable success of the late war, they proceeded as follows; "The new ministry, finding the brave foes of Britain, though frequently defeated, yet still contending, took up the unfortunate idea of granting them a hasty peace, and of then subduing her faithful friends.

"These devoted colonies were judged to be in such a state as to present victories without bloodshed, and all the easy emoluments of statutable plunder. The uninterrupted tenor of their peaceable and respectful behaviour from the beginning of their colonization; their dutiful, zealous, and useful services during the war, though so recently and amply acknowledged in the most honourable manner by his majesty, by the late king, and by parliament, could not save them from the intended innovations. Parliament was influenced to adopt the pernicious project; and assuming a new power over them, has in the course of eleven years given such decisive specimens of the spirit and consequences attending this power, as to leave no doubt of the effects of acquiescence under it.

"They have undertaken to give and grant our money without our consent, though we have ever exercised an exclusive right to dispose of our own property. Statutes have been passed for extending the jurisdiction of the courts of admiralty and vice-admiralty beyond their ancient limits; for depriving us of the accustomed and inestimable rights of trial by jury, in cases affecting both life and property; for suspending the legislature of one of our colonies; for interdicting

dicting all commerce to the capital of another, and for altering fundamentally the form of government established by charter, and secured by acts of its own legislature; and solemnly confirmed by the crown; for exempting the murderers of colonists from legal trial; and in effect from punishment; for erecting in a neighbouring province, acquired by the joint arms of Great-Britain and America, a despotism dangerous to our very existence; and for quartering soldiers upon the colonists in time of a profound peace. It has also been resolved in parliament, that colonists, charged with committing certain offences, shall be transported to England to be tried.

“But why should we enumerate our injuries in detail?—By one statute it was declared, that parliament can of right make laws to bind us in all cases whatever. What is to defend us against so enormous, so unlimited a power? Not a single person who assumes it is chosen by us, or is subject to our controul or influence; but, on the contrary, they are all of them exempt from the operation of such laws; and an American revenue, if not diverted from the ostensible purposes for which it is raised, would actually lighten their own burdens in proportion as it increases ours.

“We saw the misery to which such despotism would reduce us. We for ten years incessantly and ineffectually besieged the throne as supplicants; we reasoned, we remonstrated with parliament in the most mild and decent language; but administration, sensible that we should regard these measures as freemen ought to do, sent over fleets and armies to enforce them.

“We

“ We have pursued every temperate, every respectful measure ; we have even proceeded to break off all commercial intercourse with our fellow-subjects, as our last peaceable admonition, that our attachment to no nation on earth would supplant our attachment to liberty ; this we flattered ourselves was the ultimate step of the controversy ; but subsequent events have shown how vain was this hope of finding moderation in our enemies !

“ The Lords and Commons, in their address in the month of February, said, that a rebellion at that time actually existed in the province of Massachusetts-Bay ; and that those concerned in it had been countenanced and encouraged by unlawful combinations and engagements entered into by his majesty’s subjects in several of the colonies ; and therefore they besought his majesty that he would take the most effectual measures to enforce due obedience to the laws and authority of the supreme legislature. Soon after the commercial intercourse of whole colonies with foreign countries was cut off by an act of parliament ; by another, several of them were entirely prohibited from the fisheries in the sea near their coasts, on which they always depended for their subsistence ; and large reinforcements of ships and troops were immediately sent over to General Gage.

“ Fruitless were all the intreaties, arguments and eloquence of an illustrious band of the most distinguished peers and commoners, who nobly and strenuously asserted the justice of our cause to stay, or even to mitigate, the heedless fury with which these accumulated outrages were hurried

on. Equally fruitless was the interference of the city of London, of Bristol, and of many other respectable towns in our favour."

After having reproached parliament, General Gage, and the British government in general, they proceed thus; "We are reduced to the alternative of crusing an unconditional submission to tyranny, or resistance by force. The latter is our choice. We have counted the cost of this contest, and find nothing so dreadful as voluntary slavery. Honour, justice, and humanity, forbid us tamely to surrender that freedom which we received from our gallant ancestors, and which our innocent posterity have a right to receive from us. Our cause is just; our union is perfect, our internal resources are great; and, if necessary, foreign assistance is undoubtedly attainable. We fight not for glory or conquest; we exhibit to mankind the remarkable spectacle of a people attacked by unprovoked enemies. They boast of their privileges and civilization, and yet proffer no milder conditions than servitude or death. In our native land, in defence of the freedom that is our birthright, for the protection of our property acquired by the honest industry of our forefathers and our own, against violence actually offered, we have taken up arms; we shall lay them down when hostilities shall cease on the part of our aggressors, and all danger of their being renewed shall be removed—and not before."

These are some of the most striking passages in the declaration of congress on taking up arms against Great Britain, and dated July 6th, 1775. The determined spirit which it shows, ought to have

have convinced the people of Britain, that the conquest of America was an event scarce ever to be expected. In every other respect an equal spirit was shown; and the rulers of the British nation had the mortification to see those whom they styled *rebels* and *traitors*, succeed in negotiations in which they themselves were utterly foiled. In the passing of the Quebec-bill, ministry had flattered themselves that the Canadians would be so much attached to them on account of restoring the French laws, that they would very readily join in any attempt against the colonists who had reprobated that bill in such strong terms; but in this, as in every thing else indeed, they found themselves mistaken. The Canadians having been subject to Britain for a period of 15 years, and being thus rendered sensible of the advantage of British government, received the bill itself with evident marks of disapprobation; nay, reprobated it as tyrannical and oppressive. A scheme had been formed for General Carleton, governor of the province, to raise an army of Canadians wherewith to act against the Americans; and so sanguine were the hopes of administration in this respect, that they had sent 20,000 stand of arms, and a great quantity of military stores, to Quebec for the purpose. But the people, though they did not join the Americans, yet were found immoveable in their purpose to stand neuter. Application was made to the bishop; but he declined to interpose his influence, as contrary to the rules of the Popish clergy; so that the utmost efforts of government in this province were found to answer little or no purpose.

The British administration next tried to engage the Indians in their cause. But though agents were dispersed among them with large presents to the chiefs, they universally replied, that they did not understand the nature of the quarrel, nor could they distinguish whether those who dwelt in America or on the other side of the ocean were in fault : but they were surpris'd to see Englishmen ask their assistance against one another ; and advis'd them to be reconcil'd, and not to think of shedding the blood of their brethren.—To the representations of congress they paid more respect. These set forth, that the English on the other side of the ocean, had taken up arms to enslave, not only their countrymen in America, but the Indians also ; and if the latter should enable them to overcome the colonists, they themselves would soon be reduced to a state of slavery also. By arguments of this kind these savages were engag'd to remain neuter ; and thus the colonists were freed from a most dangerous enemy. On this occasion the congress thought proper to hold a solemn conference with the different tribes of Indians. The speech made by them on the occasion is curious, but too long to be fully inserted. The following is a specimen of the European mode of addressing these people.

“ Brothers, Sachems, and Warriors !

“ We the delegates from the Twelve United Provinces, now sitting in general congress at Philadelphia, send their talk to you our brothers.

“ Brothers and Friends, now attend !

“ When our fathers crossed the great water, and came over to this land, the king of England

S

gave

gave them a talk, assuring them that they and their children should be his children; and that if they would leave their native country, and make settlements, and live here, and buy and sell, and trade with their bretheren beyond the water, they should still keep hold of the same covenant-chain, and enjoy peace; and it was covenanted, that the fields, houses, goods, and possessions, which our fathers should acquire, should remain to them as their own, and be their childrens for ever, and at their sole disposal.

“Brothers and Friends open an ear!

“We will now tell you of the quarrel betwixt the counsellors of King George and the inhabitants and colonies of America.

“Many of his counsellors have persuaded him to break the covenant-chain, and not to send us any more good talks. They have prevailed upon him to enter into a covenant against us, and have torn asunder, and cast behind their backs, the good old covenant which their ancestors and ours entered into, and took strong hold of. They now tell us they will put their hands into our pocket without asking, as though it were their own; and at their pleasure they will take from us our charters, or written civil constitution, which we love as our lives; also our plantations, our houses, and our goods, whenever they please, without asking our leave. They tell us that our vessels may go to that or this island in the sea, but to this or that particular island we shall not trade any more; and in case of our noncompliance with these new orders, they shut up our harbours.

“Brothers, we live on the same ground with you; the same island is our common birth-place.

We

We desire to sit down under the same tree of peace with you: let us water its roots, and cherish the growth, till the large leaves and flourishing branches shall extend to the setting sun, and reach the skies. If any thing disagreeable should ever fall out between us, the Twelve United Colonies, and you, the Six Nations, to wound our peace, let us immediately seek measures for healing the breach. From the present situation of our affairs, we judge it expedient to kindle up a small fire at Albany, where we may hear each other's voice, and disclose our minds fully to one another."

The other remarkable transactions of this congress were the ultimate refusal of the conciliatory proposal made by Lord North, of which such sanguine expectations had been formed by the English ministry; and appointing a generalissimo to command their armies, which were now very numerous. The person chosen for this purpose was **GEORGE WASHINGTON**: a man so universally beloved, that he was raised to such a high station by the unanimous voice of congress; and his subsequent conduct showed him every way worthy of it. Horatio Gates and Charles Lee, two English officers of considerable reputation, were chosen; the former an adjutant-general, the second a major-general. Artemus Ward, Philip Schuyler, and Israel Putnam, were likewise nominated major-generals Seth Pomeroy, Richard Montgomery, David Wooster, William Heath, Joseph Spencer, John Thomas, John Sullivan, and Nathaniel Green, were chosen brigadier-generals at the same time.

Congress had now also the satisfaction to receive deputies from the colony of Georgia, expressing a desire to join the confederacy. The reasons they give for renouncing their allegiance to Britain was, that the conduct of parliament towards the other colonies had been oppressive; that tho' the obnoxious acts had not been extended to them, they could view this only as an omission, because of the seeming little consequence of their colony; and therefore looked upon it rather to be a slight than a favour. At the same time they framed a petition to the king, similar to that sent by the other colonies, and which met with a similar reception.

CH A P III.

The Canada Expedition—Disputes of Lord Dunmore with the Virginians—North, and South Carolina expel their Governors—Boston attacked, and evacuated.

THE success which had hitherto attended the Americans in all their measures, now emboldened them to think not only of defending themselves, but likewise of acting offensively against Great-Britain. The conquest of Canada appeared an object within their reach, and one that would be attended with many advantages; and as an invasion of that province was already facilitated by the taking of Crown-Point and Ticonderago, it was resolved if possible to penetrate that way into
Canada,

Canada, and reduce Quebec during the winter, before the fleets and armies which they were well assured would sail thither from Britain should arrive. By order of congress, therefore, 3000 men were put under the command of Generals Montgomery and Schuyler, with orders to proceed to Lake Champlain, from whence they were to be conveyed in flat-bottomed boats to the mouth of the river Sorel, a branch of the great river St. Lawrence, and on which is situated a fort of the same name with the river. On the other hand, they were opposed by General Carleton, governor of Canada, a man of great activity and experience in war, who, with a very few troops, had hitherto been able to keep in awe the disaffected people of Canada, notwithstanding all the representations of the colonists. He had now augmented his army by a considerable number of Indians, and promised, even in his present situation, to make a very formidable resistance.

As soon as General Montgomery arrived at Crown-Point he received information that several armed vessels were stationed at St John's, a strong fort on the Sorel, with a view to prevent his crossing the lake, on which he took possession of an island which commands the mouth of the Sorel, and by which he could prevent them from entering the lake. In conjunction with General Schuyler, he next proceeded to St John's, but finding that place too strong, it was agreed in a council of war, to retire to Isle aux Noix, where General Schuyler being taken ill, Montgomery was left to command alone. His first step was to gain over the Indians whom Gen. Carleton had employed, and this he in a great measure accom-

plished ; after which, on receiving the full number of troops appointed for this expedition, he determined to lay siege to St John's. In this he was facilitated by the reduction of Chamblee, a small fort in the neighbourhood, where he found a large supply of powder. An attempt was made by General Carleton to relieve the place ; for which purpose he with great pains collected about 1000 Canadians, while Colonel Maclean proposed to raise a regiment of the Highlanders who had emigrated from their own country to America.

But while Gen. Carleton was on his march with these new levies, he was attacked by the provincials, and utterly defeated ; which being made known to another body of Canadians who had joined Colonel Maclean, they abandoned him without striking a blow, and he was obliged to retreat to Quebec.

The defeat of General Carleton was a sufficient recompence to the Americans for that of Colonel Ethan Allen, which had happened some time before. The success which had attended this gentleman against Crown-Point and Ticonderago had emboldened him to make a similar attempt on Montreal ; but being attacked by the militia of the place, supported by a detachment of regulars, he was entirely defeated and taken prisoner.

As the defeat of Gen. Carleton and the desertion of Maclean's forces left no room for the garrison of St John's to hope for any relief, they consented to surrender themselves prisoners of war ; but were in other respects treated with great humanity. They were in number 500 regulars and 200 Canadians, among whom were many of the French nobility, who had been active in promoting

promoting the cause of Britain among their countrymen.

Gen. Montgomery next took measures to prevent the British shipping from passing down the river from Montreal to Quebec. This he accomplished so effectually that the whole were taken. The town itself was obliged to surrender at discretion; and it was with the utmost difficulty that General Carleton escaped in an open boat by the favour of a dark night.

No further obstacle now remained in the way of the Americans to the capital, except what arose from the nature of the country; and these indeed were very considerable. Nothing, however, could damp the ardour of the provincials. Notwithstanding it was now the middle of November and the depth of winter was at hand, Colonel Arnold formed a design of penetrating thro' woods, morasses, and the most frightful solitudes from New England to Canada by a nearer way than that which Montgomery had chosen; and this he accomplished in spite of every difficulty, to the astonishment of all who saw or heard of the attempt. A third part of his men under another colonel had been obliged to leave him by the way, for want of provisions; the total want of artillery rendered his presence insignificant before a place so strongly fortified; and the smallness of his army rendered it even doubtful whether he could have taken the town by surprise. The Canadians indeed were amazed at the exploit, and their inclination to revolt from Britain was somewhat augmented; but none of them as yet took up arms in behalf of America. The consternation into which the town of Quebec was thrown proved detrimental rather

rather than otherwise to the expedition ; as it doubled the vigilance and activity of the inhabitants to prevent any surprize ; and the appearance of common danger united all parties, who, before the arrival of Arnold, were contending most violently with one another. He was therefore obliged to content himself with blocking up the avenues to the town, in order to distress the garrison for want of provisions ; and even this he was unable to do effectually, by reason of the small number of his men.

The matter was not much mended by the arrival of General Montgomery. The force he had with him, even when united to that of Arnold, was too insignificant to attempt the reduction of a place so strongly fortified, especially with the assistance only of a few mortars and field-pieces. After the siege had continued through the month of December, General Montgomery, conscious that he could accomplish his end no other way than by surprize, resolved to make an attempt on the last day of the year 1775. The method he took at this time was perhaps the best that human wisdom could devise. He advanced by break of day, in the midst of an heavy fall of snow, which covered his men from the sight of the enemy. Two real attacks were made by himself and Colonel Arnold, at the same time that two feigned attacks were made on two other places, thus to distract the garrison, and make them divide their forces. One of the real attacks was made by the people of New-York, and the other by those of New-England under Arnold. Their hopes of surprizing the place, however, were defeated by the signal for the
attack

attack being through some mistake given too soon. General Montgomery himself had the most dangerous place, being obliged to pass between the river and some high rocks on which the Upper Town stands; so that he was forced to make what haste he could to close with the enemy. His fate, however, was now decided. Having forced the first barrier, a violent discharge of musketry and grape-shot from the second killed him, his principal officers, and the most of the party he commanded; on which those who remained immediately retreated. Colonel Arnold, in the mean time, made a desperate attack on the Lower Town, and carried one of the barriers after an obstinate resistance for an hour; but in the action he himself received a wound, which obliged him to withdraw. The attack, however, was continued by the officers whom he had left, and another barrier forced; but the garrison, now perceiving that nothing was to be feared except from that quarter, collected their whole force against it; and, after a desperate engagement of three hours, overpowered the provincials, and obliged them to surrender.

In this action, it must be confessed that the valour of the provincial troops could not be exceeded. They had fought under as great disadvantages as those which attended the British at Bunker's Hill, and had behaved equally well. Such a terrible disaster left no hope remaining of the accomplishment of their purpose, as General Arnold could now scarce number 800 effective men under his command. He did not, however, abandon the province, or even remove to a greater distance than three miles from Quebec; and here he

he still found means to annoy the garrison very considerably by intercepting their provisions. The Canadians notwithstanding the bad success of the American arms, still continued friendly; and thus he was enabled to sustain the hardships of a winter-encampment in that most severe climate. The congress, far from passing any censure on him for his misfortune, created him a brigadier-general.

While hostilities were thus carried on with vigour in the north, the flame of contention was gradually extending itself in the south. Lord Dunmore, the governor of Virginia was involved in disputes similar to those which had taken place in other colonies. - These had proceeded so far that the assembly was dissolved; which in this province was attended with a consequence unknown to the rest. As Virginia contained a great number of slaves, it was necessary that a militia should be kept constantly on foot to keep them in awe. During the dissolution of the assembly the militia-laws expired; and the people, after complaining of the danger they were in from the negroes, formed a convention, which enacted that each county should raise a quota for the defence of the province. Dunmore, on this, removed the powder from Williamsburg; which created such discontents, that an immediate quarrel would probably have ensued, had not the merchants of the town undertaken to obtain satisfaction for the injury supposed to be done to the community. This tranquillity, however, was soon interrupted; the people, alarmed by a report that an armed party were on their way from the man of war where the powder had been deposited,

posited, assembled in arms, and determined to oppose by force any farther removals. In some of the conferences which passed at this time, the governor let fall some unguarded expressions, such as threatening them with setting up the royal standard, proclaiming liberty to the negroes, destroying the town of Williamsburg, &c. which were afterwards made public, and contributed greatly to increase the public ferment.

The people now held frequent assemblies. Some of them took up arms with a design to force the governor to restore the powder, and to take the public money into their own possession: but on their way to Williamsburg for this purpose, they were met by the receiver-general, who became security for the payment of the gunpowder, and the inhabitants promised to take care of the magazine and public revenue.

By these proceedings the governor was so much intimidated, that he sent his family on board a man of war. He himself, however, issued a proclamation, in which he declared the behaviour of the person who promoted the tumult treasonable, accused the people of dissatisfaction, &c. On their part they were by no means deficient in recriminating; and some letters of his to Britain being about the same time discovered, consequences ensued extremely similar to those which had been occasioned by those of Mr Hutchinsons at Boston.

In this state of confusion the governor thought it necessary to fortify his palace with artillery, and procure a party of marines to guard it. Lord North's conciliatory proposal arriving also about the same time, he used his utmost endeavours to
cause

the people comply with it. The arguments he used were plausible ; and, had not matters already gone to such a pitch of distraction, it is highly probable that some attention would have been paid to them. “The view (he said) in which the colonies ought to hold this conciliatory proposal, was no more than an earnest admonition from Great-Britain to relieve her wants : that the utmost condescendence had been used in the mode of application ; no determinate sum having been fixed, as it was thought most worthy of British generosity to take what they thought could be conveniently spared, and likewise to leave the mode of raising it to themselves,” &c. But the clamour and dissatisfaction were now so universal, that nothing else could be attended to. The governor had called an assembly for the purpose of laying this conciliatory proposal before them ; but it had been little attended to. The assembly began their session by inquiries into the state of the magazine. It had been broken into by some of the townsmen ; for which reason spring-guns had been placed there by the governor, which discharged themselves upon the offenders at their entrance : these circumstances, with others of a similar kind, raised such a violent uproar, that, as soon as the preliminary business of the session was over, the governor retired on board a man of war, informing the assembly that he durst no longer trust himself on shore. This produced a long course of disputation, which ended in a positive refusal of the governor to trust himself again in Williamsburg, even to give his assent to the bills, which could not be passed without it, and though the assembly offered to bind themselves

elves for his personal safety. In his turn he requested them to meet him on board the man of war, where he then was; but his proposal was rejected; and further correspondence containing the least appearance of friendship was discontinued.

Lord Dunmore, having thus abandoned his government, attempted to reduce by force those whom he could no longer govern. Some of the most strenuous adherents to the British cause, whom their zeal had rendered obnoxious at home, now repaired to him. He was also joined by numbers of black slaves. With these, and the assistance of the British shipping, he was for some time enabled to carry on a kind of predatory war sufficient to hurt and exasperate, but not to subdue. After some inconsiderable attempts on land, proclaiming liberty to the slaves, and setting up the royal standard, he took up his residence at Norfolk, a maritime town of some consequence, where the people were better affected to Britain than in most other places. A considerable force, however, was collected against him: and the natural impetuosity of his temper prompting him to act against them with more courage than caution, he was entirely defeated, and obliged to retire to his shipping, which was now crowded by the number of those who had incurred the resentment of the provincials.

In the mean time a scheme of the utmost magnitude and importance was formed by one Mr Conolly, a Pennsylvanian, attached to the cause of Britain. The first step of this plan was to enter into a league with the Ohio indians. This he communicated to Lord Dunmore, and it received

T

his

his approbation; upon which Conolly set out and actually succeeded in his design. On his return he was dispatched to General Gage, from whom he received a colonel's commission, and set out in order to accomplish the remainder of his scheme. The plan in general was, that he should return to the Ohio, where, by the assistance of the British and Indians in these parts, he was to penetrate through the back settlements into Virginia, and join Lord Dunmore at Alexandria. But by an accident very naturally to be expected he was discovered, taken prisoner, and confined.

After the retreat of Lord Dunmore from Norfolk, that place was taken possession of by the provincials, who greatly distressed those on board Lord Dunmore's fleet, by refusing to supply them with any necessaries. This proceeding drew a remonstrance from his Lordship; in which he insisted that the fleet should be furnished with necessaries; but his request being denied, a resolution was taken to set fire to the town. After giving the inhabitants proper warning, a party landed, under cover of a man of war, and set fire to that part which lay nearest the shore; but the flames were observed at the same time to break forth in every other quarter, and the whole town was reduced to ashes. This universal destruction, occasioned a loss of more than L. 300,000.

In the southern Colonies of Carolina, the governors were expelled, and obliged to take refuge on board of men of war, as Lord Dunmore had been; Mr Martin, governor of North Carolina, on a charge of attempting to raise the back settlers, consisting chiefly of Scots Highlanders against the colony. Having secured themselves
against

against any attempts from these enemies, however, they proceeded to regulate their internal concerns in the same manner as the rest of the colonies; and by the end of the year 1775, Britain beheld the whole of America united against her in the most determined opposition. Her vast possessions of that tract of land (since known by the name of the *Thirteen United States*) were now reduced to the single town of Boston; in which her forces were besieged by an army with whom they were apparently not able to cope, and by whom they must of course expect in a very short time to be expelled. The situation of the inhabitants of Boston, indeed, was peculiarly unhappy. After having failed in their attempts to leave the town, General Gage had consented to allow them to retire with their effects; but afterwards, treacherously refused to fulfil his promise. When he resigned his place to General Howe in October 1775, the latter, apprehensive that they might give intelligence of the situation of the British troops, strictly prohibited any person from leaving the place under pain of military execution. Thus matters continued till the month of March 1776, when the town was evacuated.

On the 2d of that month, General Washington opened a battery on the west side of the town, from whence it was bombarded, with a heavy fire of cannon at the same time; and three days after, it was attacked by another battery from the eastern shore. This terrible attack continued for 14 days without intermission; when General Howe, finding the place no longer tenable, determined if possible to drive the enemy from their works. Preparations were therefore made for

a most vigorous attack on an hill called Dorchester Neck, which the Americans had fortified in such a manner as would in all probability have rendered the enterprize next to desperate. No difficulties, however, were sufficient to daunt the spirit of the general; and every thing was in readiness, when a sudden storm prevented an exertion which must have been productive of a dreadful waste of blood. Next day, upon a more close inspection of the works they were to attack, it was thought advisable to desist from the enterprize altogether. The fortifications were very strong, and exceedingly well provided with artillery; and, besides other implements of destruction, upwards of 100 hogheads of stones were provided to roll down upon the enemy as they came up; which, as the ascent was extremely steep, must have done prodigious execution.

Nothing therefore now remained but to think of a retreat; and even this was attended with the utmost difficulty and danger. The Americans, however, knowing that it was in the power of the British general to reduce the town to ashes, which could not have been repaired in many years, did not think proper to give the least molestation; and for the space of a fortnight the troops were employed in the evacuation of the place, from whence they carried along with them 2000 of the inhabitants, who durst not stay on account of their attachment to the British cause. From Boston they sailed to Halifax; but all their vigilance could not prevent a number of valuable ships from falling into the hands of the Americans. A considerable quantity of cannon and
ammunition

ammunition had also been left at Bunker's Hill and Boston Neck; and in the town, an immense variety of goods, principally woollen and linen, of which the provincials stood very much in need. The estates of those who fled to Halifax were confiscated; as also those who were attached to government, and had remained in the town. As an attack was expected as soon as the British forces should arrive, every method was employed to render the fortifications already very strong, impregnable. For this purpose some foreign engineers were employed, who had before arrived at Boston; and so eager were people of all ranks to accomplish this business, that every able-bodied man in the place, without distinction of rank, set apart two days in the week, to complete it the sooner.

CHAP. IV.

Congress declare the States independent—Siege of Quebec still continued—Gen. Thompson defeated—Insurrection of the Loyalists in North Carolina—Lord Dunmore finally driven out of Virginia—British attack Charleston, and are repulsed—Americans form a Navy.

THE Americans, exasperated to the utmost by **the** proceedings of parliament, which placed them out of the royal protection, and engaged foreign mercenaries in the plan for subduing them,

them, now formally renounced all connection with Britain, and declared themselves independent. This celebrated declaration was published on the 4th of July 1776. Previous to this a circular letter had been sent through each colony, stating the reasons for it; and such was the animosity now every where prevailing against Great-Britain, that it met with universal approbation, except in the province of Maryland alone. It was not long, however, before the people of that colony, finding themselves left in a very dangerous minority, thought proper to accede to the measures of the rest. The manifesto itself was in the usual nervous style, stating a long list of grievances, for which redress had been often applied in vain; and for these reasons they determined on a final separation; to hold the people of Britain as the rest of mankind, "enemies in war, in peace friends."

After thus publicly throwing off all allegiance and hope of reconciliation, the colonists soon found that an exertion of all their strength was required in order to support their pretensions. Their arms, indeed, had not, during this season, been attended with success in Canada. Reinforcements had been promised to Colonel Arnold, who still continued the blockade of Quebec; but they did not arrive in time to second his operations. Being sensible, however, that he must either desist from the enterprise, or finish it successfully, he recommenced in form; attempting to burn the shipping, and even to storm the town itself. They were unsuccessful, however, by reason of the smallness of their number, though they succeeded so far as to burn a number of
house

houses in the suburbs ; and the garrison were obliged to pull down the remainder, in order to prevent the fire from spreading,

As the provincials, though unable to reduce the town, kept the garrison in continual alarms, and in a very disagreeable situation, some of the nobility collected themselves into a body under the command of one Mr. Beaujeu, in order to relieve their capital ; but they were met on their march by the provincials, and so entirely defeated, that they were never afterwards able to attempt any thing. Their want of artillery at last convinced them, that it was impracticable in their situation to reduce a place so strongly fortified ; the small-pox, at the same time made its appearance in their camp, and carried off great numbers ; intimidating the rest to such a degree, that they deserted in crowds. To add to their misfortunes, the British reinforcements unexpectedly appeared, and the ships made their way through the ice with such celerity, that the one part of their army was separated from the other ; and General Carleton falling out as soon as the reinforcement was landed, obliged them to fly with the utmost precipitation, leaving behind them all their cannon and military stores ; at the same time that their shipping was entirely captured by vessels sent up the river for that purpose. On this occasion the provincials fled with such precipitation that they could not be overtaken ; so that none fell into the hands of the British, excepting the sick and wounded. General Carleton now gave a signal instance of his humanity : Being well apprised that many of the provincials had not been able to accompany the rest in their
retreat,

retreat, and that they were concealed in woods, &c. in a very deplorable situation, he generously issued a proclamation, ordering proper persons to seek them out, and give them relief at the public expence; at the same time lest, through fear of being made prisoners, they should refuse these offers of humanity, he promised that, as soon as their situation enabled them, they should be at liberty to depart to their respective homes.

The British general, now freed from any danger of an attack, was soon enabled to act offensively against the provincials, by the arrival of the forces destined for that purpose from Britain. By these he was put at the head of 12,000 regular troops, among whom were those of Brunswick. With this force he instantly set out to the Three Rivers, where he expected that Arnold would have made a stand; but he had retired to Sorel a place 150 miles distant from Quebec, where he was at last met by the reinforcement ordered by congress. Here, though the preceeding events were by no means calculated to inspire much military ardour, a very daring enterprize was undertaken; and this was, to surprize the British troops posted here under Generals Frazer and Nesbit; of whom the former commanded those on land, the latter, such as were on board of transports and were but a little way distant. The enterprize was undoubtedly very hazardous, both on account of the strength of the parties against whom they were to act, and as the main body of the British forces were advanced within 50 miles of the place; besides that a number of armed vessels and transports with troops lay between them and the Three Rivers.

Rivers. Two thousand chosen men, however, under General Thompson, engaged in this enterprise. Their success was by no means answerable to their spirit and valour. Though they passed the shipping without being observed, General Frazer had notice of their landing; and thus being prepared to receive them, they were soon thrown into disorder, at the same time that General Nesbit, having landed his forces, prepared to attack them in the rear. On this occasion some field-pieces did prodigious execution, and a retreat was found to be unavoidable. General Nesbit, however, had got between them and their boats, so that they were obliged to take a circuit through a deep swamp, while they were hotly pursued by both parties at the same time, who marched for some miles on each side the swamp, till at last the unfortunate provincials were sheltered from further danger by a wood at the end of the swamp. Their general, however, was taken with 200 of his men.

By this disaster the provincials lost all hopes of accomplishing any thing more in Canada. They demollished their works, and carried off their artillery with the utmost expedition. They were pursued, however, by General Burgoyne; who on the 18th of June arrived at Fort St John's which he found abandoned and burnt. Chamblee had shared the same fate, as well as all the vessels that were not capable of being dragged up against the current of the river; and the provincial troops had retreated across the lake to Crown-Point, whither they could not be immediately followed. Thus was the province of Canada entirely evacuated by the Americans, who had

had thus secured the frontier of the adjacent states from invasion on the part of the British; the object of a campaign in which 13000 men were employed, and near a million of money expended, was rendered in a great measure abortive. General Sullivan, who conducted this retreat after the affair of General Thompson, had great merit in what he did, and received the thanks of congress accordingly.

This was followed by some transactions in the southern colonies, which farther evinced their resolution, and raised the spirits of the Americans— We have formerly taken notice that Mr Martin, governor of North-Carolina, had been obliged to leave his province and take refuge on board a man of war. Notwithstanding this he did not despair of reducing it again to obedience. For this purpose he applied to the regulators, a daring set of banditti, who lived in a kind of independent state; and though considered by government as rebels, yet had never been molested, on account of their numbers and known skill in the use of fire-arms. To the chiefs of these people commissions were sent, in order to raise some regiments; and a Colonel Macdonald was appointed to command them. In the month of February he erected the king's standard, issued proclamations, &c. and collected some forces, expecting to be soon joined by a body of regular troops, who were known to be shipped from Britain to act against the southern colonies. The Americans, sensible of their danger, dispatched immediately what forces they had to act against the royalists, at the same time that they diligently exerted themselves to support these with suitable reinforcements.

reinforcements. Their present force was Commanded by General Moore whose numbers were inferior to Macdonald; for which reason the latter summoned him to join the king's standard under pain of being treated as a rebel. But Moore, being well provided with cannon, and conscious that nothing could be attempted against him, returned the compliment, by acquainting Colonel Macdonald, that if he and his party would lay down their arms, and subscribe an oath of fidelity to congress, they should be treated as friends; but if they persisted in an undertaking for which it was evident they had not sufficient strength, they could not but expect the severest treatment. In a few days General Moore found himself at the head of 8000 men, by reason of the continual supplies which daily arrived from all parts. The royal party amounted only to 2000, and they were destitute of artillery, which prevented them from attacking the enemy while they had the advantage of numbers. They were now therefore obliged to have recourse to a desperate exertion of personal valour; by dint of which they effected a retreat for near 80 miles to Moor's Creek, within 16 miles of Wilmington. Could they have gained this place, they expected to have been joined by governor Martin and general Clinton, who had lately arrived with a considerable detachment. But general Moore with his army pursued them so close, that they were obliged to attempt the passage of the creek itself, tho' a considerable body of the Americans, under the command of Colonel Caswell, with fortifications well planted with cannon, was posted on the other. On attempting the creek, how-

ever, it was found not to be fordable. They were obliged therefore to cross over a wooden-bridge, which the provincials had not time to destroy entirely. They had, however, by pulling up part of the planks, and greasing the remainder in order to render them slippery, made the passage so difficult, that the royalists could not attempt it. In this situation they were, on the 27th of February, attacked by general Moore with his superior army, and totally defeated with the loss of their general and most of their leaders, as well as the best and bravest of their men.

Thus was the power of the Americans established in North-Carolina. Nor were they less successful in the province of Virginia; where Lord Dunmore having long continued an useless predatory war, was at last driven from every creek and road in the province. The people he had on board were distressed to the highest degree by confinement in small vessels. The heat of the season, and the numbers crowded together, produced a pestilential fever, which made great havock, especially among the blacks. At last, finding themselves in the utmost hazard of perishing by famine as well as disease, they set fire to the least valuable of their vessels, reserving only about 50 for themselves, in which they bid a final adieu to Virginia, some sailing to Florida, some to Bermuda, and the rest to the West-Indies.

In South-Carolina the Americans, had a more formidable enemy to deal with. At Cape-Fear a junction was formed between Sir Henry Clinton, and Sir Peter Parker, the latter of whom had sailed with his squadron directly from Europe. They concluded to attempt the reduction of
I Charleston

Charleston as being, of all places within the line of their instructions, the object at which they could strike with the greatest prospect of advantage. They had 2,800 land forces, which they hoped, with the co-operation of their shipping, would be fully sufficient.

For some months past every exertion had been made to put the colony of South-Carolina, and especially its capital Charleston, in a respectable posture of defence. In subserviency to this view, works had been erected on Sullivan's island, which is situated so near the channel leading up to the town, as to be a convenient post for annoying vessels approaching it.

Sir Peter Parker attacked the fort on that island with two fifty gun ships, the Bristol and Experiment, four frigates, the Active, Acteon, Solebay and Syren, each of 28 guns. The Sphynx of 20 guns, the Friendship armed vessel of 22 guns, Ranger sloop, and Thunder bomb, each of 8 guns. On the fort were mounted 26 cannon, 20, 18 and 9 pounders. The attack commenced between ten and eleven in the forenoon, and was continued upwards of ten hours. The garrison consisting of 375 regulars and a few militia, under the command of colonel Moultrie, made a most gallant defence. They fired deliberately, for the most part took aim and seldom missed their object. The ships were torn almost to pieces, and the killed and wounded on board exceeded 200 men. The loss of the garrison was only ten men killed and 22 wounded. The fort being built of palmetto was little damaged. The shot which struck it were ineffectually buried in its soft wood. General Clinton had sometime before

U

the

the engagement, landed with a number of troops on Long-Island, and it was expected that he would have co-operated with Sir Peter Parker, by crossing over the narrow passage, which divides the two islands, and attacking the fort in its unfinished rear; but the extreme danger to which he must unavoidably have exposed his men, induced him to decline the perilous attempt. Colonel Thomson with 7 or 800 men was stationed at the east end of Sullivan's island to oppose their crossing. No serious attempt was made to land either from the fleet or the detachment commanded by Sir Henry Clinton. The firing ceased in the evening, and soon after the ships slipped their cables. Before morning they had retired about two miles from the island. Within a few days more the troops re-embarked and sailed for New-York. The thanks of congress were given to General Lee, who had been sent by congress to take the command in Carolina, and also to colonels Moultrie and Thomson, for their good conduct on this memorable day. In compliment to the commanding officer the fort from that time was called Fort Moultrie.

This year also, the Americans, having so frequently made trial of their valour by land, became desirous of trying it by sea also, and of forming a navy that might in some measure be able to protect their trade, and do essential hurt to the enemy. In the beginning of March, Commodore Hopkins was dispatched with five frigates to the Bahama islands, where he made himself master of the ordnance and military stores; but the gunpowder which had been the principal object, was removed. On his return he captured
severa

several vessels ; but was foiled in his attempt on the Glasgow frigate, which found means to escape notwithstanding the efforts of his whole squadron.

CH A P V.

Battle on Long Island—New-York abandoned—Battle at the White-Plains—British overrun the Jerseys—Rhode-Island taken—The British convey Vessels up the Lake Champlain, and destroy the Naval Force of the Americans—General Lee taken prisoner—Battles at Trenton and Princeton.

THE time, however, was now come when the fortitude and patience of the Americans were to undergo a severe trial. Hitherto they had been on the whole successful in their operations : but now they were doomed to experience misfortune, misery, and disappointment ; the enemy over-running their country, and their own armies not able to face them in the field. The province of New-York, as being the most central colony, and most accessible by sea, was pitched upon for the object of the main attack. The force sent against it consisted of 6 ships of the line, 30 frigates, besides other armed vessels, and a vast number of transports. The fleet was commanded by Lord Howe, and the land forces by his brother General Howe, who was now at Halifax. The latter, however, a considerable time before his brother arrived, had set sail from Halifax, and lay before New-York, but without attempting to

commence hostilities until he should be joined by his brother. The Americans had, according to custom, fortified New-York and the adjacent islands in an extraordinary manner. However, General Howe was suffered to land his troops on Staten Island, where he was soon joined by a number of the inhabitants. About the middle of July, Lord Howe arrived with the grand armament; and being one of the commissioners appointed to receive the submission of the colonists, he published a circular letter to this purpose to the several governors, who had lately been expelled from their provinces, desiring them to make the extent of his commission, and the powers he was invested with by parliament, as public as possible. Here, however, congress saved him trouble, by ordering his letter and declaration to be published in all the newspapers, "That every one might see the insidiousness of the British ministry, and that they had nothing to trust to besides the exertion of their own valour."

Lord Howe next sent a letter to General Washington; but as it was directed to George Washington, Esq." the General refused to accept of it, as not being directed in the style suitable to his station. To obviate this objection, Adjutant-general Patterson was sent with another letter, directed "To George Washington, &c. &c. &c." But though a very polite reception was given to the bearer, General Washington utterly refused the letter; nor could any explanation of the adjutant induce him to accept of it. The only interesting part of the conversation was that relating to the powers of the commissioners, of whom Lord Howe was one. The adjutant told him,

him, that these powers were very extensive ; that the commissioners were determined to exert themselves to the utmost, in order to bring about a reconciliation ; and that he hoped the General would consider this visit as a step towards it. General Washington replied, that it did not appear that these powers consisted in any thing else than granting pardons ; and as America had committed no offence, she asked no forgiveness, and was only defending her unquestionable rights.

The decision of every thing being now by consent of both parties left to the sword, no time was lost, but hostilities commenced as soon as the British troops could be collected. This, however, was not done before the month of August : when they landed without any opposition on Long-island, opposite to the shore of Staten-Island. General Putnam, with a large body of troops, lay encamped and strongly fortified on a peninsula on the opposite shore, with a range of hills between the armies, the principal pass of which was near a place called *Flat-bush*. Here the centre of the British army, consisting of Hessians, took post ; the left wing, under General Grant, lying near the shore ; and the right, consisting of the greater part of the British forces, lay under Lord Percy, Cornwallis, and General Clinton. Putnam had ordered the passes to be secured by large detachments, which was executed as to those at hand ; but one of the utmost importance, that lay at a distance, was entirely neglected. This gave an opportunity to a large body of troops under Lord Percy and Clinton to pass the mountains and attack the Americans

in the rear, while they were engaged with the Hessians in front. Through this piece of negligence their defeat became inevitable. Those who were engaged with the Hessians first perceived their mistake, and began a retreat towards their camp; but the passage was intercepted by the British troops, who drove them back into the woods. Here they were met by the Hessians; and thus they were for many hours slaughtered between the two parties, no way of escape remaining but by breaking through the British troops, and thus regaining their camp. In this attempt many perished; and the right wing, engaged with General Grant, shared the same fate. The victory was complete; and the Americans lost on this fatal day (August 27th) considerably upwards of 1000 men, and two generals; several officers of distinction were made prisoners, with a number of privates. Among the slain, a regiment consisting of young gentlemen of fortune and family in Maryland, was almost entirely cut in pieces, and of the survivors not one escaped without a wound.

The ardour of the British troops was now so great, that they could scarce be restrained from attacking the lines of the provincials; but for this there was now no occasion, as it was certain they could not be defended. Of the British and Hessians about 450 were lost in this engagement.

As none of the American commanders thought it proper to risk another attack, it was resolved to abandon their camp as soon as possible. Accordingly, on the night of the 29th of August, the whole of the continental troops were ferried
over

over with the utmost secrecy and silence ; so that in the morning the British had nothing to do but take possession of the camp and what artillery they had abandoned.

This victory, though complete, was very far from being so decisive as the conquerors imagined. Lord Howe, supposing that it would be sufficient to intimidate the congress into some terms, sent General Sullivan, who had been taken prisoner in the late action, to congress, with a message, importing, that though he could not consistently treat with them as a legal assembly, yet he would be very glad to confer with any of the members in their private capacity ; setting forth at the same time the nature and extent of his powers as commissioner. But the congress were not so humbled as to derogate in the least from the dignity of character they had assumed. They replied, that the congress of the free and independent states of America could not consistently send any of its members in another capacity than that which they had publicly assumed ; but as they were extremely desirous of restoring peace to their country upon equitable conditions, they would appoint a committee of their body to wait upon him, and learn what proposals he had to make.

This produced a new conference. The committee appointed by congress was composed of Dr Franklin, Mr Adams, and Mr Rutledge. They were very politely received by his Lordship ; but the conference proved as fruitless as before independency had been declared ; and the final answer of the deputies was, that they were extremely willing to enter into any treaty with
Great

Britain that might conduce to the good of both nations, but that they would not treat in any other character than that of independent states. This positive declaration instantly put an end to all hopes of reconciliation; and it was resolved to prosecute the war with the utmost vigour. Lord Howe, after publishing a manifesto, in which he declared the refusal of congress, and that he himself was willing to confer with all well disposed persons about the means of restoring public tranquillity, set about the most proper methods for reducing the city of New-York. Here the provincial troops were posted, and from a great number of batteries kept continually annoying the British shipping. The East River lay between them, of about 1200 yards in breadth, which the British troops were extremely desirous of passing. At last, the ships having, after an incessant cannonade of several days, silenced the most troublesome batteries, a body of troops were sent up the river to a bay, about three miles distant, where the fortifications were less strong than in other places. Here, having driven off the provincials by the cannon of the fleet, they marched directly towards the city; but the Americans finding that they should now be attacked on all sides, abandoned the city, and retired to the north of the island, where the principal force was collected. In their passage thither they skirmished with the British, but carefully avoided a general engagement; and it was observed that they did not behave with that ardour and impetuous valour which had hitherto marked their character.

The British and provincial armies were now now above two miles distant from each other.

The

The former lay encamped from shore to shore for an extent of two miles, being the breadth of the island, which, though 15 miles long, exceeds not two in any part in breadth. The provincials, who lay directly opposite had strengthened their camp with many fortifications; at the same time being masters of all the passes and defiles betwixt the two camps they were enabled to defend themselves against an army much more numerous than their own; and they had strongly fortified a pass called *King's-Bridge*, whence they could secure a passage to the continent in case of any misfortune. Here General Washington, in order to inure the provincials to actual service, and at the same time to annoy the enemy as much as possible, employed his troops in continual skirmishes; by which it was observed that they soon recovered their spirits, and behaved with their usual boldness.

As the situation of the two armies was now highly inconvenient for the British generals it was resolved to make such movements as might oblige Gen. Washington to relinquish his strong situation. The possession of New-York had been less beneficial than was expected. A few days after it was evacuated by the Americans, a dreadful fire broke out, occasioned, probably, by the licentious conduct of some of its new masters, and had it not been for the active exertions of the sailors and soldiery, the whole town might have been consumed, the wind being high, and the weather remarkably dry. About a thousand houses were destroyed. General Howe having left Lord Percy with sufficient force to garrison New-York. he embarked his army in flat-bottomed boats by which they were conveyed through

through the dangerous passage called *Hell-Gate*, and landed near the town of West-Chester, lying on the continent towards Connecticut. Here having received a supply of men and provisions, they moved to New-Rochelle, situated on the sound which separates Long-Island from the continent. After this receiving still fresh reinforcements, they made such movements as threatened to distress the provincials very much by cutting off their convoys of provisions from Connecticut, and thus force them to an engagement. This, however, General Washington determined at all events to avoid. He therefore extended his forces into a long line opposite to the way in which the enemy marched, keeping the Bronx, a river of considerable magnitude, between the two armies, with the North-River on his rear. Here again the provincials continued for some time to annoy and skirmish with the royal army, until at last, by some other manœuvres, the British general found means to attack them advantageously at a place called the *White-Plains*, and drove them from some of their posts. The success on this occasion was much less complete than the former; however it obliged the provincials once more to shift their ground, and to retreat farther up the country. General Howe pursued for some time; but at last finding all his endeavours vain to bring the Americans to a pitched battle, he determined to give over such an useless chase, and employ himself in reducing the forts which the provincials still retained in the neighbourhood of New-York. In this he met with the most complete success. The Americans, on the approach of the king's forces, retreated from King's-Bridge into
Fort-

Fort-Washington; and this as well as Fort-Lee, which lay in the neighbourhood, was quickly reduced, though the garrison made their escape. Thus the Jerseys were laid entirely open to the incursions of the British troops, and so fully were these provinces taken possession of by the royal army, that its winter-quarters extended from New-Brunswick to the river Delaware. Had any number of boats been at hand, it was thought Philadelphia would have fallen into their hands. All these, however, had been carefully removed by the Americans. In lieu of this enterprise, Sir Henry Clinton, undertook an expedition to Rhode-Island, and became master of it without losing a man. His expedition was also attended with this further advantage, that the American fleet under commodore Hopkins was obliged to sail as far as possible up the river Providence, and thus remained entirely useless.

The same ill success continued to attend the Americans in other parts. After their expulsion from Canada, they had crossed the Lake Champlain, and taken up their quarters at Crown-Point, as we have already mentioned. Here they remained for some time in safety, as the British had no vessels on the lake, and consequently general Burgoyne could not pursue them. To remedy this deficiency, there was no possible method, but either to construct vessels on the spot, or take to pieces some vessels already constructed, and drag them up the river into the lake. This, however, was effected in no longer a space than three months; and the British general, after incredible toil and difficulty, saw himself in possession of a great number of vessels, by which
means

means he was enabled to pursue his enemies, and invade them in his turn. The labour undergone at this time by the sea and land forces must indeed have been prodigious; since there were conveyed over land, and dragged up the rapids of St Lawrence, no fewer than thirty large long-boats, 400 batteaux, besides a vast number of flat-bottomed boats, and a gondola of 30 tons. The intent of the expedition was to push forward, before winter, to Albany, where the army would take up its winter-quarters, and next spring effect a junction with that under General Howe, when it was not doubted that the united force and skill of these two commanders would speedily put a termination to the war.

By reason of the difficulties with which the equipment of this fleet had been attended, it was the beginning of October before the expedition could be undertaken. It was now, however, by every judge, allowed to be completely able to answer the purpose for which it was intended. It consisted of one large vessel with three masts, carrying 18 twelve pounders; two schooners, the one carrying 14, the other 12 six pounders; a large flat-bottomed radeau with six twenty-four and 6 twelve pounders; and a gondola with 8 nine pounders. Besides these, were 20 vessels of a smaller size, called *gun-boats*, carrying each a piece of brass ordnance from nine to twenty-four pounders, or howitzers. Several long-boats were fitted out in the same manner; and besides all these, there was a vast number of boats and tenders of various sizes to be used as transports for the troops and baggage. It was manned by a number of select seamen, and the guns were to
be

be served by a detachment from the corps of artillery; the officers and soldiers appointed for this expedition were also chosen out of the whole army.

To oppose this formidable armament the Americans had only a very inconsiderable force, commanded by General Arnold; who, after engaging part of the British fleet for a whole day, took advantage of the darkness of the night to set sail without being perceived, and the next morning was out of sight: but he was so hotly pursued by the British, that on the second day after, he was overtaken, and forced to a second engagement. In this he behaved with great gallantry; but his force being very inferior to that of the enemy, he was obliged to run his ships ashore and set them on fire. A few only escaped to lake George; and the garrison of Crown-Point having destroyed or carried off every thing of value, retired to Ticonderago. Thither General Carleton intended to have pursued them; but the difficulties he had to encounter appeared so many and so great, that it was thought proper to march back into Canada and desist from any further operations till next spring.

Thus the affairs of the Americans seemed every where going to wreck; even those who had been most sanguine in their cause began to waver. The time, also, for which the soldiers had enlisted themselves was now expired; and the bad success of the preceding campaign had been so very discouraging, that no person was willing to engage himself during the continuance of a war of which the event seemed to be so doubtful. In consequence of this, therefore, General Washington found his army daily decreasing in strength; so that, from 30,000

of which it consisted when general Howe landed on Staten Island, scarce a tenth-part could now be mustered. To assist the chief commander as much as possible, general Lee had collected a body of forces in the north; but on his way southward, having imprudently taken up his lodging at some distance from his troops, information was given to colonel Harcourt, who happened at that time to be in the neighbourhood, and Lee was made prisoner. The loss of this general was much regretted, the more especially as he was of superior quality to any prisoner in the possession of the colonists, and could not therefore be exchanged. Six field-officers were offered in exchange for him, and refused; and the congress was highly irritated at its being reported that he was to be treated as a deserter, having been a half-pay officer in the British service at the commencement of the war. In consequence of this they issued a proclamation, threatening to retaliate on the prisoners in their possession whatever punishment would be inflicted on any of those taken by the British, and especially that their conduct should be regulated by the treatment of general Lee.

In the mean time they proceeded with the most indefatigable diligence to recruit their army, and bound their soldiers to serve for a term of three years, or during the continuance of the war. The army designed for the ensuing campaign, was to consist of 88 battalions; of which each province was to contribute its quota; and 20 dollars were offered as a bounty to each soldier, besides an allotment of lands at the end of the war. No lands were promised to those who only enlisted for three years. All officers or soldiers disabled through

through wounds received in the service were to enjoy half-pay during life. To defray the expence, Congress borrowed five millions of dollars at five per cent.; for the payment of which the United States became surety. At the same time, in order to animate the people to vigorous exertions, a declaration was published, in which they set forth the necessity there was for taking proper methods to insure success in their cause: they endeavoured to palliate as much as possible the misfortunes which had already happened; and represented the true cause of the present distress to be the short term of enlistment.

This declaration, together with the imminent danger of Philadelphia, determined the Americans to exert themselves to the utmost in order to reinforce general Washington's army, who, even in this time of depression and discouragement, formed the bold design of recrossing the Delaware, and attacking that part of the enemy which was posted at Trenton. As the Royal army extended in different cantonments for a great way, General Washington, perceiving the imminent danger to which Philadelphia was exposed, resolved to make some attempt on those divisions of the enemy which lay nearest that city. These happened to be the Hessians, who lay in three divisions, the last only 20 miles distant from Philadelphia. On the 25th of December, having collected as considerable a force as he could, he set out with an intent to surprize that body of the enemy which lay at Trenton. His army was divided into three bodies; one of which he ordered to cross the Delaware at Trenton Ferry, a little below the town; the second at a good distance below, at a place called

Bordentown, where the second division of Hessians was placed; while he himself, with the third, directing his course to a ferry some miles above Trenton, intended to have passed it at midnight, and attack the Hessians at break of day. But by reason of various impediments, it was eight in the morning before he could reach the place of his destination. The enemy, however, did not perceive his approach till they were suddenly attacked. Colonel Ralle who commanded them, did all that could be expected from a brave and experienced officer; but every thing was in such confusion, that no efforts of valour or skill could now retrieve matters. The Colonel himself was mortally wounded, his troops were entirely broken, their artillery seized, and about 1000 taken prisoners. After this gallant exploit, General Washington again returned into Pennsylvania.

This action, though seemingly of no very decisive nature, was sufficient at that time to turn the fortune of war in favour of America. It tended greatly to lessen the apprehensions which the provincials had of the Hessians, at the same time that it equally abated the confidence which the British had till now put in them.

Reinforcements came in from several quarters to General Washington, so that he was soon in a condition once more to pass the Delaware, and take up his quarters at Trenton; where he was emboldened to maintain his station, notwithstanding the accounts that were received of the enemy's rapid advance towards him. Lord Cornwallis, accordingly, made his appearance in full force; and, on the evening of his arrival, the little town of Trenton contained the two hostile armies, separated

parated only by a small creek, which was fordable in many places. This was, indeed the crisis of the American revolution; and had his Lordship made an immediate attack, in pursuance of what is reported to have been the advice of Sir William Erskine, General Washington's defeat seems to have been inevitable; but a night's delay turned the fate of the war, and produced an enterprize, the magnitude and glory of which, can only be equalled by its success. General Washington having called a council of war, stated the calamitous situation to which his army was reduced; and having heard the various opinions of his officers, finally proposed a circuitous march to Princeton, as the means of avoiding, at once, the imputation of a retreat, and the danger of a battle, with numbers so inferior, and in a situation so ineligible. The idea was unanimously approved; and, as soon as it was dark, the necessary measures were taken for accomplishing it. A line of fires was kindled, which served to give light to the Americans, while it obscured them from the observation of the enemy; and by a providential interposition, the weather, which had been for some time past warm, moist, and foggy, suddenly changed to a hard frost; and, in a moment as it were, rendered the road, which had been deep and heavy, firm and smooth as a pavement. At break of day General Washington arriving near Princeton, was discovered by a party of British troops, consisting of three regiments under the command of Col. Mawhood, who, were on their march to Trenton. With these the centre of the Americans engaged, and after killing 60, wounding many, and taking 100 prisoners, obliged the rest to make a precipitate

pitatè escape, some towards Trenton, and others in a retrograde route to Brunswick. The loss of the Americans was inconsiderable in point of numbers; but the fall of the amiable general Mercer rendered it important. The British astonished and discouraged at the success and spirit of these repeated enterprizes, abandoning both Trenton and Princeton, retreated to Brunswick; while the triumphant Americans retired to Morristown. General Washington, however, omitted no opportunity of recovering what had been lost; and by dividing his army into small parties, which could be reunited on a few hours warning, he in a manner entirely covered the country with it, and repossessed himself of all the important places.

Thus ended the campaign of 1776, with scarce any other real advantage than the acquisition of the city of New York, and of a few fortresses in its neighbourhood; where the troops were constrained to act with as much circumspection as if they had been besieged by a victorious army, instead of being themselves the conquerors.



CH A P VI.

Excursions of the British from New-York—Battle at Brandywine—Philadelphia taken—Battle at Germantown—Attack of Mud-Island—General Burgoyne's Expedition—and Surrender.

THE army at New-York began in 1777 to exercise a kind of predatory war, by sending out parties to destroy magazines, make incursions, and
take

take or destroy such forts as lay on the banks of rivers, to which their great command of shipping gave them access. In this they were generally successful: the provincial magazines at Peek's Hill, a place about 50 miles distant from New-York, were destroyed, the town of Dunbury in Connecticut burnt, and that of Ridgefield in the same province was taken possession of. In returning from the last expedition, however, the British were greatly harrassed by the Americans under Generals Arnold, Wooster, and Sullivan; but they made good their retreat, though with the loss of above 200 killed and wounded. On the American side the loss was considerable; General Wooster was killed, and Arnold in the most imminent danger. On the other hand the Americans destroyed the stores at Stagg-harbour, in Long-Island, and made prisoners of all who defended the place.

As this method of making war, however, could answer but little purpose, and favoured more of the barbarous incursions of savages than of a war carried on by a civilized people, it was resolved to make an attempt on Philadelphia. At first it was thought that this could be done through the Jerseys; but the cruelties exercised by the British plundering parties had excited so general an abhorrence, and General Washington had received such large reinforcements, and posted himself so strongly, that it was found to be impracticable. Many stratagems were used to draw him from his strong situation, but without success; so that it was found necessary to make the attempt on Philadelphia by sea. While the preparations necessary for this expedition were going forward, the Americans found means to make amends for
the

the capture of General Lee by that of General Prescott, who was seized in his quarters with his aid de camp, in much the same manner as General Lee had been. This was exceedingly mortifying to the General himself, as he had not long before set a price upon General Arnold, by offering a sum of money to any one that apprehended him; which the latter answered by setting a lower price upon General Prescott.

The month of July was far advanced before the preparations for the expedition against Philadelphia were completed; and it was the 23d before the fleet was able to sail from Sandy Hook. The force employed in this expedition consisted of 36 battalions of British and Hessians, a regiment of light horse, and a body of loyalists raised at New York. The remainder of these, with 17 battalions, and another body of light horse, were stationed at New-York under Sir Henry Clinton. Seven battalions were stationed at Rhode-Island. After a week's sailing they arrived at the mouth of the Delaware; but there having received certain intelligence, that the navigation of the river was so effectually obstructed, that no possibility of forcing a passage remained; or more probably that Gen. Washington had marched within a short distance of Philadelphia; it was resolved to proceed further southward to Chesapeak Bay in Maryland, from whence the distance to Philadelphia was not very great, and where the provincial army would find less advantage from the nature of the country than in the Jerseys.

The navigation from Delaware to Chesapeak took up the best part of the month of August, and that up the bay itself was extremely difficult and tedious.

tedious. At last, having failed up the river Elk, as far as was practicable, the troops were landed without opposition, and set forward on their intended expedition. On the news of their arrival at Chesapeak, General Washington left the Jerseys, and hastened to the relief of Philadelphia; and in the beginning of September met the royal army at Brandy-wine Creek about mid-way, between the head of the Elk and Philadelphia. Here he adhered to his former method of skirmishing and harrassing the royal army on its march; but as this proved insufficient to stop its progress, he retired to that side of the creek next to Philadelphia, with an intent to dispute the passage. This brought on a general engagement on the 11th of September. The royal army advanced at break of day in two columns, commanded by lieutenant general Knyphausen, and by lord Cornwallis. The first took the direct road to Chadd's Ford, and made a shew of passing it, in front of the main body of the Americans. At the same time the other column moved up on the west side of the Brandy-wine to its fork, and crossed both its branches about two o'clock in the afternoon, and then marched down on the east side thereof, with the view of turning the right wing of their adversaries.

This they effected and compelled them to retreat with great loss. General Knyphausen amused the Americans with the appearance of crossing the ford, but did not attempt it until lord Cornwallis having crossed it above and moved down on the opposite side, had commenced his attack. Knyphausen then crossed the ford, and attacked the troops posted for its defence. These, after

after a severe conflict, were compelled to give way. The retreat of the Americans became general, and was continued to Chester, under cover of general Weeden's brigade, which came off in good order. The final issue of battles often depends on small circumstances, which human prudence cannot control—one of these occurred here, and prevented general Washington from executing a bold design, to effect which, his troops were actually in motion. This was to have crossed the Brandywine, and attacked Knyphausen, while gen. Sullivan and lord Stirling, should keep earl Cornwallis in check. In the most critical moment, General Washington received intelligence which he was obliged to credit, that the column of lord Cornwallis had been only making a feint, and was returning to join Knyphausen. This prevented the execution of a plan, which, if carried into effect, would probably have given a different turn to the events of the day. The killed and wounded in the royal army, were near six hundred. The loss of the Americans was twice that number. The celebrated Marquis de la Fayette first bled here in the cause of liberty, which he had espoused with enthusiastic ardour, His wound was slight, but it endeared him to the Americans.

The loss of this battle proved also the loss of Philadelphia. General Washington retired towards Lancaster, to save the stores which had been deposited at Reading. But tho' he could not prevent the loss of Philadelphia, he still adhered to his original plan of distressing the royal party, by laying ambushes and cutting off detached parties; but in this he was less successful than formerly; and one of his own detachments which lay

in ambush in a wood were themselves surprised and entirely defeated, with the loss of about 300 killed and wounded, besides 70 or 80 taken, and all their arms and baggage.

General Howe now perceiving that the Americans would not venture another battle even for the sake of their capital, took peaceable possession of it on the 26th of September. His first care was then to cut off, by means of strong batteries, the communication between the upper and lower parts of the river; which was executed, notwithstanding the opposition of some American armed vessels; one of which, carrying 36 guns was taken. His next task was to open a communication with it by sea; and this was a work of no small difficulty. A vast number of batteries and forts had been erected, and immense machines formed like chevaux de frize, from whence they took their name, sunk in the river to prevent its navigation. As the fleet was sent round to the mouth of the river in order to co-operate with the army, this work, however difficult, was accomplished; nor did the provincials give much opposition, as well knowing that all places of this kind were now untenable. General Washington, however, took the advantage of the royal army being divided to attack the camp of the principal division of it that lay at Germantown, in the neighbourhood of Philadelphia. In this he met with very little success; for tho' he reached the place of destination by three o'clock in the morning, the patrols had time to call the troops to arms. The Americans, notwithstanding made a very resolute attack; but they were received with so much bravery, that they were compelled to abandon the attempt,

attempt, and retreat in great disorder; with the advantage, however, of carrying off their cannon, though pursued for a considerable way, after having upwards of 200 killed, and about 500 wounded, and upwards of 400 taken prisoners, among whom were 54 officers. On the British side, the loss amounted to 430 wounded and prisoners, and 70 killed, but among the last were General Agnew and colonel Bird, with some other excellent officers.

The British were well apprized, that without the command of the Delaware, their possession of Philadelphia would be of no advantage. They therefore strained every nerve, to open the navigation of that river,—to this end lord Howe had early taken the most effectual measures for conducting the fleet and transports round from the Chesapeake to the Delaware, and drew them up on the Pennsylvania shore, from Reedy-Island to New-Castle. Early in October, a detachment from the British army crossed the Delaware, with a view of dislodging the Americans from Billingsport. On their approach, the place was evacuated. As the season advanced, more vigorous measures for removing the obstructions were concerted between the general and the admiral. Batteries were erected on the Pennsylvania shore to assist in dislodging the Americans from Mud-Island. At the same time Count Donop with 2000 men, having crossed into New-Jersey, opposite to Philadelphia, marched down on the eastern side of the Delaware, to attack the redoubt at Red-Bank. This was defended by about 400 men under the command of colonel Greene. The attack immediately commenced

by a smart cannonade, under cover of which the Count advanced to the redoubt. This place was intended for a much larger garrison than was then in it. It had therefore become necessary to run a line in the middle thereof, and one part of it was evacuated. That part was easily carried by the assailants on which they indulged in loud huzzas for their supposed victory. The garrison kept up a severe well directed fire on the assailants by which they were compelled to retire. They suffered not only in the assault, but in the approach to, and retreat from the fort. Their whole loss in killed and wounded was about 400. Count Donop was mortally wounded and taken prisoner. Congress resolved to present colonel Green with a sword for his good conduct on this occasion. An attack made about the same time on fort Mifflin by men of war and frigates, was not more successful than the assault on Red-Bank. The Augusta man of war of 64 guns, and the Merlin, two of the vessels which were engaged in it, got aground. The former was fired and blew up. The latter was evacuated.

Though the first attempts of the British, for opening the navigation of the Delaware, were unsuccessful, they carried their point in another way that was unexpected. The chevaux de frise, having been sunk some considerable time, the current of the water was diverted by this great bulk into new channels. In consequence thereof the passage between the islands and the Pennsylvania shore was so deepened as to admit vessels of some considerable draught of water. Through this passage, the Vigilant, a large ship, cut down so as to draw but little water, mounted with 24

Y

pounders

pounders, made her way to a position from which she might enfilade the works on Mud-Island. This gave the British such an advantage, that the post was no longer tenable. Colonel Smith, who had with great gallantry defended the fort from the latter end of September, to the 11th of November, being wounded, was removed to the main. Within five days after his removal, major Thayer, who as a volunteer had nobly offered to take charge of this dangerous post, was obliged to evacuate it.

This event did not take place till the works were entirely beat down—every piece of cannon dismounted, and one of the British ships so near that she threw granadoes into the fort, and killed the men uncovered in the platform. The troops who had so bravely defended fort Mifflin, made a safe retreat to Red-Bank. Congress voted swords to be given to lieutenant colonel Smith and Commodore Hazlewood, for their gallant defence of the Delaware. Within three days after Mud-Island was evacuated, the garrison was also withdrawn from Red-Bank, on the approach of lord Cornwallis, at the head of a large force prepared to assault it. Some of the American galleys and armed vessels escaped by keeping close in with the Jersey shore, to places of security above Philadelphia, but 17 of them were abandoned by their crews, and fired. Thus the British gained a free communication between their army and shipping. This event was to them very desirable. they had been previously obliged to draw their provisions from Chester a distance of sixteen miles, at some risque, and a certain great expence. The long protracted
defenc

defence of the Delaware, deranged the plans of the British, for the remainder of the campaign, and consequently saved the adjacent country.

Thus the campaign of 1777 in Pennsylvania, concluded, upon the whole successfully on the part of the British. In the north, however, matters wore a different aspect. The expedition in that quarter had been projected by the British ministry as the most effectual method that could be taken to crush the colonies at once. The four provinces of New-England had originally begun the confederacy against Britain, and were still considered as the most active in the continuation of it; and it was thought, that any impression made upon them, would contribute in an effectual manner to the reduction of all the rest. For this purpose, an army of 4000 chosen British troops and 3000 Germans were put under the command of General Burgoyne; General Carleton was directed to use his interest with the Indians to persuade them to join in this expedition; and the province of Quebec was to furnish large parties to join in the same. The officers who commanded under General Burgoyne were, General Philips of the artillery, Generals Frazer, Powell, and Hamilton, with the German officers General Reidesel and Specht. The soldiers, as has already been observed, were all excellently disciplined, and had been kept in their winter-quarters with all imaginable care, in order to prepare them for the expedition on which they were going. To aid the principal expedition, another was projected on the Mohawk River under Colonel St Leger, who was to be assisted by Sir John Johnson, son to the famous Sir Wil-

Sam Johnson who had so greatly distinguished himself in the war of 1755.

On the 21st of June 1777, the army encamped on the western side of the lake Champlain; where, being joined by a considerable body of Indians, General Burgoyne made a speech, in which it is said he exhorted these new allies, but ineffectually, to lay aside their ferocious and barbarous manner of making war; to kill only such as opposed them in arms; and to spare prisoners, with such women and children as should fall into their hands. After issuing a proclamation, in which the force of Britain, and that which he commanded, was set forth in very ostentatious terms, the campaign opened with the siege of Ticonderago. The place was very strong, and garrisoned by 6000 men under General St. Clair; nevertheless, the works were so extensive that even this number was scarce sufficient to defend them properly. They had therefore omitted to fortify a rugged eminence called Sugar Hill, the top of which overlooked and effectually commanded the whole works; imagining, perhaps, that the difficulty of the ascent would be sufficient to prevent the enemy from taking possession of it. On the approach of the first division of the army, the provincials abandoned and set fire to their outworks; and so expeditious were the British troops, that by the 5th of July every post was secured which was judged necessary for investing it completely. A road was soon afterwards made to the very summit of that eminence which the Americans had supposed could not be ascended; and so much were they now disheartened that they instantly abandoned the fort entirely.

taki

taking the road to Skenesborough, a place to the south of Lake George; while their baggage, with what artillery and military stores they could carry off, were sent to the same place by water. But the British generals were determined not to let them pass so easily. Both were pursued and both overtaken. Their armed vessels consisted only of five galleys; two of which were taken, and three blown up; on which they set fire to their boats and fortifications at Skenesborough. On this occasion the provincials lost 200 boats, 130 pieces of cannon, with all their provisions and baggage. Their land-forces under Colonel Francis made a brave defence against General Frazer; and superior in number, had almost overpowered him, when General Reidesel with a large body of Germans came to his assistance. The provincials were now overpowered in their turn; and their commander being killed, they fled on all sides with great precipitation. In this action 200 Americans were killed, as many taken prisoners, and above 600 wounded, many of whom perished in the woods for want of assistance.

During the engagement General St Clair was at Castleton; about six miles from the place; but instead of going forward to Fort Anne, the next place of strength, he repaired to the woods, which lie between that fortress and New-England. General Burgoyne, however, detached Colonel Hill with the ninth regiment, in order to intercept such as should attempt to retreat towards Fort Anne. On his way he met with a body of the Americans more numerous than his own; but after an engagement of three hours,

Y 3

they

they were obliged to retire with great loss. After so many disasters, despairing of being able to make any stand at Fort Anne, they set fire to it and retired to Fort Edward. In all these engagements the loss of killed and wounded in the royal army did not exceed 200 men.

General Burgoyne was now obliged to suspend his operations for some time, and wait at Skeneborough for the arrival of his tents, provisions, &c. but employed this interval in making roads through the country about St Anne, and in clearing a passage for his troops to proceed against the Americans. This was attended with incredible toil; but all obstacles were surmounted with equal patience and resolution by the army. In short, after undergoing the utmost difficulty and making every exertion, he arrived with his army before Fort Edward about the end of July. Here General Schuyler had been for some time endeavouring to recruit the shattered American forces, and had been joined by General St Clair with the remains of his army; the garrison of Fort George also, situated on the lake of that name, had evacuated the place and retired to Fort Edward.

But on the approach of the royal army, they retired from thence also, and formed their headquarters at Saratoga. Notwithstanding the great success of the British general, they shewed not the least disposition to submit, but seemed only to consider how they might make the most effectual resistance. For this purpose, the militia was every where raised and draughted to join the army at Saratoga; and such numbers of volunteers were daily added, that they soon began

to recover from the alarm into which they had been thrown. That they might have a commander whose abilities could be relied on, General Arnold was appointed, who repaired to Saratoga with a considerable train of artillery; but receiving intelligence that Colonel St Leger was proceeding with great rapidity in his expedition on the Mohawk River, he removed to Still water, a place about half-way between Saratoga, and the junction of the Mohawk and Hudson's River. The Colonel, in the mean time had advanced as far as Fort Stanwix; the siege of which he pressed with great vigour. On the 6th of August, understanding that a supply of provisions, escorted by 800 or 900 men, was on the way to the fort, he dispatched Sir John Johnson with a strong detachment to intercept it. This he did so effectually, that, besides intercepting the provisions, 400 of its guard were slain, 200 taken, and the rest escaped with great difficulty. The garrison, however, were not to be intimidated by the threats or representations of the colonel: on the contrary, they made several successful sallies under Colonel Willet, the second in command; and this gentleman, in company with another, even ventured out of the fort, and, eluding the vigilance of the enemy, passed through them in order to hasten the march of General Arnold to their assistance.

Thus the affairs of Colonel St Leger seemed to be in no very favourable situation notwithstanding his late success, and they were soon totally ruined by the desertion of the Indians. They had been alarmed by the report of General Arnold's advancing with 2000 men to the relief of
the

they were obliged to retire with great loss. After so many disasters, despairing of being able to make any stand at Fort Anne, they set fire to it and retired to Fort Edward. In all these engagements the loss of killed and wounded in the royal army did not exceed 200 men.

General Burgoyne was now obliged to suspend his operations for some time, and wait at Skeneborough for the arrival of his tents, provisions, &c. but employed this interval in making roads through the country about St Anne, and in clearing a passage for his troops to proceed against the Americans. This was attended with incredible toil; but all obstacles were surmounted with equal patience and resolution by the army. In short, after undergoing the utmost difficulty and making every exertion, he arrived with his army before Fort Edward about the end of July. Here General Schuyler had been for some time endeavouring to recruit the shattered American forces, and had been joined by General St Clair with the remains of his army; the garrison of Fort George also, situated on the lake of that name, had evacuated the place and retired to Fort Edward.

But on the approach of the royal army, they retired from thence also, and formed their headquarters at Saratoga. Notwithstanding the great success of the British general, they shewed not the least disposition to submit, but seemed only to consider how they might make the most effectual resistance. For this purpose, the militia was every where raised and draughted to join the army at Saratoga; and such numbers of volunteers were daily added, that they soon began

to recover from the alarm into which they had been thrown. That they might have a commander whose abilities could be relied on, General Arnold was appointed, who repaired to Saratoga with a considerable train of artillery; but receiving intelligence that Colonel St Leger was proceeding with great rapidity in his expedition on the Mohawk River, he removed to Still water, a place about half-way between Saratoga, and the junction of the Mohawk and Hudson's River. The Colonel, in the mean time had advanced as far as Fort Stanwix; the siege of which he pressed with great vigour. On the 6th of August, understanding that a supply of provisions, escorted by 800 or 900 men, was on the way to the fort, he dispatched Sir John Johnson with a strong detachment to intercept it. This he did so effectually, that, besides intercepting the provisions, 400 of its guard were slain, 200 taken, and the rest escaped with great difficulty. The garrison, however, were not to be intimidated by the threats or representations of the colonel: on the contrary, they made several successful sallies under Colonel Willet, the second in command; and this gentleman, in company with another, even ventured out of the fort, and, eluding the vigilance of the enemy, passed through them in order to hasten the march of General Arnold to their assistance.

Thus the affairs of Colonel St Leger seemed to be in no very favourable situation notwithstanding his late success, and they were soon totally ruined by the desertion of the Indians. They had been alarmed by the report of General Arnold's advancing with 2000 men to the relief of
the

the fort ; and while the Colonel was attempting to give them encouragement, another report was spread, that General Burgoyne had been defeated with great slaughter, and was now flying before the provincials. On this he was obliged to do as they thought proper ; and the retreat could not be effected without the loss of the tents, the artillery and military stores.

General Burgoyne, in the mean time, notwithstanding all the difficulties he had already sustained, found that he must still encounter more. The roads he had made with so much labour and pains were destroyed, either by the wetness of the season or by the Americans ; so that the provisions he brought from Fort George could not arrive at his camp without the most prodigious toil. On hearing of the siege of Fort Stanwix by Colonel St Leger, he determined to move forward, in hopes of inclosing the enemy betwixt his own army and that of St Leger, or of obtaining the command of all the country between Fort Stanwix and Albany : or, at any rate, a junction with Colonel St Leger would be effected, which could not but be attended with the most happy consequences. The only difficulty was the want of provisions ; and this it was proposed to remedy by reducing the provincial magazines at Bennington. For this purpose, Colonel Baum, a German officer of great bravery, was chosen with a body of 500 men. The place was about 20 miles from Hudson's River ; and to support Colonel Baum's party, the whole army marched up the river's bank, and encamped almost opposite to Saratoga, with the river betwixt it and the place. An advanced party was posted at Bat-
ten

ten Kill, between the camp and Bennington, in order to support Colonel Baum. In their way the British seized a large supply of cattle and provisions, which were immediately sent to the camp; but the badness of the roads retarded their march so much, that intelligence of their design was sent to Bennington. Understanding now that the American force was greatly superior to his own, the Colonel acquainted the General who immediately dispatched Colonel Breyman with a party to his assistance; but through the same causes that had retarded the march of Colonel Baum, this assistance could not arrive in time. General Starke who commanded the American militia at Bennington, engaged with them before the junction of the royal detachments could be effected. On this occasion about 800 undisciplined militia, without bayonets, or a single piece of artillery, attacked and routed 500 regular troops advantageously posted behind entrenchments—furnished with the best arms, and defended with two pieces of artillery. The field pieces were taken from the party commanded by Col. Baum, and the greatest part of his detachment was either killed or captured. Colonel Breyman arrived on the same ground and on the same day, but not till the action was over. Instead of meeting his friends as he expected, he found himself briskly attacked. This was begun by colonel Warner, (who with his continental regiment, which having been sent for from Manchester, came opportunely at this time) and was well supported by Stark's militia, which had just defeated the party commanded by colonel Baum. Breyman's troops, though fatigued with their preceding

preceding march, behaved with great resolution, but were at length compelled to abandon their artillery and retreat. In these two actions the Americans took four brass field pieces, twelve brass drums, 250 dragoon swords, 4 ammunition waggons, and about 700 prisoners. The loss of the Americans, inclusive of their wounded, was about 100 men.

General Burgoyne, thus disappointed in his attempt on Bennington, applied himself with indefatigable diligence to procure provisions from Fort George; and having at length amassed a sufficient quantity to last for a month, he threw a bridge of boats over the river Hudson, which he crossed about the middle of September, encamping on the hills and plains near Saratoga. As soon as he approached the provincial army, at this time encamped at Stillwater under General Gates, he determined to make an attack; for which purpose he put himself at the head of the central division of his army, having General Fraser and Colonel Breyman on the right, with Generals Reidesel and Philips on the left. In this position he advanced on the the 19th of September. But the Americans did not now wait to be attacked: on the contrary they attacked the central division with the utmost violence; and it was not until General Philips with the artillery came up, and at eleven o'clock at night, that they could be induced to retire to their camp. On this occasion, the British troops lost about 500 in killed and wounded, and the Americans about 319. The former were very much alarmed at the obstinate resolution shown by the Americans, but this did not prevent them from advancing, and
posting

posting themselves the next day within cannon-shot of their lines. But their allies the Indians began to desert in great numbers; and at the same time the general was in the highest degree mortified by having no intelligence of any assistance from Sir Henry Clinton, as had been stipulated. He now received a letter from him by which he was informed that Sir H. intended to make a diversion on the North River in his favour. This afforded but little comfort: however, he returned an answer by several trusty persons whom he dispatched different ways, stating his present distressed situation, and mentioning that the provisions and other necessaries he had would only enable him to hold out until the 12th of October.

In the mean time the Americans, in order to cut off the retreat of the British army in the most effectual manner, undertook an expedition against Ticonderago; but were obliged to abandon the enterprize after having surpris'd all the out-posts, and taken a great number of boats with some armed vessels, and a number of prisoners. The army under general Burgoyne, however, continued to labour under the greatest distresses: so that in the beginning of October he had been obliged to diminish the soldiers allowance. On the 7th of that month he determined to move towards the enemy. For this purpose he sent a body of 1500 men to reconnoitre their left wing; intending, if possible, to break through it in order to effect a retreat. The detachment, however, had not proceeded far when a spirited attack was made on the left wing of the British army, which was with great difficulty preserved from being entirely broken by a reinforcement brought
up

up by general Frazer, who was killed in the attack. After the troops had with the most desperate efforts regained their camp, it was most vigorously assaulted by General Arnold; who, notwithstanding all opposition, would have forced the entrenchments, had he not received a dangerous wound, which obliged him to retire. Thus the attack failed on the left, but on the right the camp of the German reserve was forced, Colonel Breyman killed, and his countrymen defeated with great slaughter, and the loss of all their artillery and baggage.

This was by far the heaviest loss the British army had sustained since the action at Bunker's Hill. The list of killed and wounded amounted to near 1200, exclusive of the Germans; but the greatest misfortune was, that the Americans had now an opening on the right and rear of the British forces, so that the army was threatend with entire destruction. This obliged General Burgoyne once more to shift his position, that the Americans might also be obliged to alter theirs. This was accomplished on the night of the 7th, without any loss, and all the next day he continued to offer the Americans battle; but they were now too well assured of obtaining a complete victory, by cutting off all supplies from the British, to risk a pitched battle. Wherefore they advanced on the right side, in order to inclose him entirely; which obliged the General to direct a retreat towards Saratoga. But the Americans had now stationed a great force on the ford at Hudson's river, so that the only possibility of retreat was by securing a passage to Lake George; and to effect this, a body of workmen were detached,

tached, with a strong guard, to repair the roads and bridges that led to Fort Edward. As soon as they were gone, however, the Americans seemed to prepare for an attack: which rendered it necessary to recal the guard, and the workmen being of course left exposed, could not proceed.

In the mean time, the boats which conveyed provisions down Hudson's river were exposed to the continual fire of the Americans marksmen, who took many of them; so that it became necessary to convey the provisions over land. In this extreme danger, it was resolved to march by night to Fort Edward, forcing the passages at the fords either above or below the place; and, in order to effect this more easily, it was resolved that the soldiers should carry their provisions on their backs, leaving behind their baggage and every other incumbrance. But before this could be executed, intelligence was received that the Americans had raised strong entrenchments opposite these fords, well provided with cannon, and that they had likewise taken possession of the rising ground between Fort George and Fort Edward, which in like manner was provided with cannon.

All this time the American army was increasing by the continual arrival of militia and volunteers from all parts. Their parties extended all along the opposite bank of Hudson's River, and some had even passed it in order to observe the least movement of the British army. Every part of the British camp was reached by the grape and rifle-shot of the Americans, besides a discharge from their artillery, which was almost incessant. In this state of extreme distress and danger, the

Z

army

army continued with the greatest constancy and perseverance till the evening of the 13th of October, when an inventory of provisions being taken, it was found that no more remained than what were sufficient to serve for three days ; and a council of war being called, it was unanimously determined that there was no method now remaining but to treat with the Americans. In consequence of this a negociation was opened next day, which speedily terminated in a capitulation of the whole British army ; the articles of which were, 1. The troops under lieut. general Burgoyne, to march out of their camp with the honours of war, and the artillery of the intrenchments to the verge of the river where the old fort stood, where the arms and artillery are to be left.—The arms to be piled by word of command from their own officers :—2. A free passage to be granted to the army under liet. gen. Burgoyne to Great-Britain, upon condition of not serving again in North-America during the present contest ; and the port of Boston to be assigned for the entry of transports, to receive the troops whenever Gen. Howe shall so order :—3. Should any cartel take place, by which the army under lieut. gen. Bargoyne, or any part of it, may be exchanged, the foregoing article to be void, as far as such exchange should be made :—4. The army under lieut. gen, Burgoyne to march to Massachusetts-Bay, by the easiest, and most expeditious and convenient route ; and to be quartered in, near, or as convenient as possible to Boston, that the march of the troops may not be delayed when transports arrive to receive them :—The troops to be supplied on their march,
and

and during their being in quarters, with provisions, by major-general Gates's orders, at the same rate of rations as the troops of his own army; and, if possible, the officers horses and cattle are to be supplied with forage at the usual rates:—6. All the officers to retain their carriages, bat-horses and other cattle, and no baggage to be molested or searched; lieut. gen. Burgoyne giving his honour, that there are no public stores contained therein. Major gen. Gates will of course take the necessary measures for the due performance of this article: should any carriages be wanted during the march, for the transportation of officers baggage, they are, if possible, to be supplied by the country at the usual rates:—7. Upon the march, and during the time the army shall remain in quarters, in the Massachusetts-Bay, the officers are not, as far as circumstances will admit, to be separated from their men.—The officers are to be quartered according to their rank, and are not to be hindered for their assembling their men for roll-callings, and other necessary purposes of regularity:—8. All corps whatever of lieutenant general Burgoyne's army, whether composed of sailors, batteau-men, artificers, drivers, independent companies, and followers of the army, of whatever country, shall be included in the fullest sense and utmost extent of the above articles, and comprehended in every respect as British subjects:—9. All Canadians, and persons belonging to the Canadian establishment, consisting of sailors, batteau-men, artificers, drivers, independent companies, and many other followers of the army, who come under no particular description, are to be permitted to return

there : they are to be conducted immediately, by the shortest route, to the first British post on Lake George, are to be supplied with provisions in the same manner as the other troops, and to be bound by the same condition of not serving during the present contest in North-America:—10. Passports to be immediately granted for three officers, not exceeding the rank of captains, who shall be appointed by lieut. gen. Burgoyne, to carry dispatches to Sir Wm. Howe, Sir Guy Carleton, and to Great-Britain by the way of New-York; and major general Gates engages the public faith, that these dispatches shall not be opened. These officers are to set out immediately after receiving their dispatches, and are to travel by the shortest route, and in the most expeditious manner:—11. During the stay of the troops in the Massachusetts Bay, the officers are to be admitted on parole, and are to be permitted to wear their side arms:—12. Should the army under lieut. gen. Burgoyne, find it necessary to send for their clothing and other baggage from Canada, they are to be permitted to do it in the most convenient manner, and necessary passports to be granted for that purpose:—13. These articles are to be mutually signed and exchanged to-morrow morning at nine o'clock; and the troops under lieut. gen. Burgoyne, are to march out of their intrenchments at three o'clock in the afternoon. Camp at Saratoga, October 16, 1777.

HORATIO GATES, Major-General

To prevent any doubts that might arise from lieut. gen. Burgoyne's name not being mentioned in the above treaty, major general Gates hereby declares, that he is understood to be comprehended

ed in it, as fully as if his name had been specifically mentioned.

HORATIO GATES

Such was the impatience of some of the militia to return home before the royal army had been brought to surrender, and so little their concern to be spectators of the event, that one of the Northampton regiments went off the day before the flag came out from Burgoyne. Another regiment took itself away while the treaty was in agitation. But the fate of the army will confirm the truth of what its commander wrote to lord George Germain, August the 20th, "the great bulk of the country is undoubtedly with the congress in principle and zeal." When after the convention the officers went into the American camp, they were surprised; and some of them said, that of all the camps they had ever seen in Germany, or elsewhere, they never saw any better disposed and secured.

The return signed by gen. Burgoyne, of the foreigners at the time of the convention, amounted to 2412. The British consisted, according to him, of 10 officers present—145 commissioned—the staff 26—sergeants and drummers 297—rank and file 2901—in all 3379; this added to the Germans, makes 5791. The American account, to show what was the sum total of the royal army acting in the northern department against the country, goes on to reckon, the sick taken 928—the wounded 528—prisoners of war before the convention 400—deferters 300—lost at Bennington 1220—killed between the 17th of September and the 18th of October 600—taken at Ticonderago 413—killed in gen. Herkimer's battle

about 300---making in all 4689. According to this way of reckoning, the royal force was 10480. It was probably full 10,000 strong, including Canadians and provincials, and exclusive of Indians, drivers, futtlers, &c. Among the prisoners taken were six members of parliament.

The train of brass artillery was a fine acquisition; it consisted of 2 twenty-four pounders---4 twelves---20 sixes---6 threes---2 eight inch howitzers---5 five and a half royal ditto---and three five and a half inch royal mortars---in all, 42 pieces of ordnance. There were also 4647 muskets---6000 dozen of cartridges, beside shot, carcasses, cases, shells, &c.

Burgoyne was desirous of a general return of the army commanded by Gates at the time of the convention. The latter understood him, and was careful not to lessen the return by suppressing a single man. The continentals, all ranks included, were 9093; the militia 4129, in all 13222; but of the former, the sick and on furlough were 2103; and of the latter, 562. The number of the militia was continually varying; and many of them were at a considerable distance from the camp.

Sir Henry Clinton, in the mean time, had failed up the North River, and destroyed the two forts called Montgomery and Clinton, with Fort Constitution, and another place called Continental Village, where were barracks for 2000 men. Seventy large cannon were carried away, besides a number of smaller artillery, and a great quantity of stores and ammunition; a large boom and chain reaching across the river from Fort Montgomery to a point of land called St Anthony's.

thony's Nose, and which cost not less than seventy thousand pounds sterling, were partly destroyed and partly carried away, as was also another boom of little less value at Fort Constitution. The loss of the British army was but small in number, though some officers of great merit were killed in the different attacks.

Another attack was made by Sir James Wallace with some frigates, and a body of land forces under General Vaughan. The place which now suffered was named Esopus: the fortifications were destroyed, and the town itself was wantonly reduced to ashes, as that called Continental Village had been before. Thus the British armament spent their time in wasting the adjacent country, when by pushing forward 136 miles in six days they might have effectually relieved Burgoyne.

But these successes, of whatever importance they might be, were now disregarded by both parties. They served only to irritate the Americans, flushed with their success; and they were utterly insufficient to raise the spirits of the British, who were now thrown into the utmost dismay.

C H A P. VII.

Treaty between France and America—Conciliatory Bill despised—Philadelphia evacuated—French Fleet arrives in America—Expedition against Georgia—South Carolina invaded—D'Estaing's Expedition against Georgia—Expeditions of the British against the northern Provinces—Attack of Penobscot.

ON the 16th of March 1778, Lord North intimated to the house of commons, that a paper had been laid before the king by the French ambassador, intimating the conclusion of an alliance between the court of France and the United States of America. The preliminaries of this treaty had been concluded in the end of the year 1777, and a copy of them sent to congress, in order to counteract any proposals that might be made in the mean time by the British ministry. On the 6th of February 1778, the articles were formally signed, to the great satisfaction of the French nation. They were in substance as follows :

1. If Great Britain should, in consequence of this treaty, proceed to hostilities against France, the two nations should mutually assist one another.

2. The main end of the treaty was, in an effectual manner to maintain the independency of America.

3. Should those places of North-America still subject to Britain be reduced by the colonies, they

they should be confederated with them, or subjected to their jurisdiction.

4. Should any of the West India islands be reduced by France, they should be deemed its property.

5. No formal treaty with Great Britain should be concluded either by France or America without the consent of each other: and it was mutually engaged that they should not lay down their arms till the independency of the States had been formally acknowledged.

6. The contracting parties mutually agreed to invite those powers that had received injuries from Great Britain to join the common cause.

7. The United States guaranteed to France all the possessions in the West Indies which she should conquer; and France in her turn guaranteed the absolute independency of the States, and their supreme authority over every country they possessed, or might acquire during the war.

The notification of such a treaty as this could not but be looked upon as a declaration of war. On its being announced to the house, every one agreed in an address to his majesty, promising to stand by him to the utmost in the present emergency; but it was warmly contended by the members in opposition, that the present ministry ought to be removed on account of their numberless blunders and miscarriages in every instance. Many were of opinion, that the only way to extricate the nation from its trouble was to acknowledge the independency of America at once; and this they might still do with a good grace what must inevitably be done at last, after expending
much

much more blood and treasure than had yet been lavished in this unhappy contest. The ministerial party, however, entertained different ideas. Instigated by zeal for the national honour, it was determined at once to resent the arrogance of France, and prosecute hostilities against America with more vigour than ever, should the terms now offered them be rejected.

The Americans in the mean time assiduously employed their agents at the courts of Spain, Vienna, Prussia and Tuscany, in order, if possible to conclude alliances with them or at least to procure an acknowledgment of their independency. As it had been reported that Britain intended to apply for assistance to Russia, the American commissioners were enjoined to use their utmost influence with the German princes to prevent such auxiliaries from marching through their territories, and to endeavour to procure the recal of the German troops already sent to America. To France they offered a cession of such West India islands as should be taken by the united strength of France and America; and should Britain by their joint endeavours be dispossessed of Newfoundland, Cape Breton, and Nova Scotia, these territories should be divided betwixt the two nations, and Great Britain be totally excluded from the fishery. The proposals to the Spanish court were, that in case they should think proper to espouse their quarrel, the American states should assist, in reducing Pensacola under the dominion of Spain, provided their subjects were allowed the free navigation of the river Mississippi and the use of the harbour of Pensacola; and they further offered, that,

that, if agreeable to Spain, they would declare war against Portugal, should that power expel the American ships from its ports.

In the mean time the troops under General Burgoyne were preparing to embark for Britain according to the convention at Saratoga; but congress having received information, that many articles of ammunition and accoutrements had not been surrendered agreeably to the stipulated terms, and finding some cause to apprehend, that sinister designs were harboured on the part of Great Britain to convey these troops to join the army at Philadelphia or New-York, positively refused to let them embark, until an explicit ratification of the convention should be properly notified by the British court.

The season for action was now approaching; and congress was indefatigable in its preparations for a new campaign, which it was confidently said would be the last. Among other methods taken for this purpose, it was recommended to all the young gentlemen of the colonies to form themselves into bodies of cavalry to serve at their own expence during the war. General Washington at the same time, to remove all incumbrances from his army, lightened the baggage as much as possible, by substituting sacks and portinanteaus in place of chests and boxes, and using pack-horses instead of waggons. On the other hand the British army expecting to be reinforced by 20,000 men, thought of nothing but concluding the war according to their wishes before the end of the campaign. It was with the utmost concern, as well as indignation, therefore, that they received the news of Lord North's conciliatory

conciliatory bill. It was universally looked upon as a national disgrace; and some even tore the cockades from their hats, and trampled them under their feet as a token of their indignation. By the colonists it was received with indifference. The British commissioners endeavoured to make it as public as possible; and the congress, as formerly, ordered it to be printed in all the newspapers. On this occasion Governor Fryon inclosed several copies of the bill to General Washington in a letter, intreating him that he would allow them to be circulated; to which the General returned for answer a copy of a newspaper in which the bill was printed, with the resolutions of congress upon it. These were, That whoever presumed to make a separate agreement with Britain should be deemed a public enemy; that the United States could not with any propriety keep correspondence with the commissioners until their independence was acknowledged, and the British fleets and armies removed from America. At the same time, the colonies were warned not to suffer themselves to be deceived into security by any offers that might be made; but to use their utmost endeavours to send their quotas with all diligence into the field. The individuals with whom the commissioners conversed on the subject of the conciliatory bill generally returned for answer, that the day of reconciliation was past; and that the haughtiness of Britain had extinguished all filial regard in the breasts of Americans.

About this time also Mr Silas Dean arrived from France with two copies of the treaty of commerce and alliance to be signed by congress

Advice

Advices of the most agreeable nature were also received from various parts, representing in the most favourable light the dispositions of the European powers; all of whom, it was said, wished to see the independence of America settled upon the most permanent basis. Considering the situation of matters with the colonists at this time, therefore, it was no wonder the commissioners found themselves unable to accomplish the errand on which they came. Their proposals were utterly rejected, themselves treated as spies, and, after a vain attempt by governor Johnstone, one of the commissioners, to bribe several members of congress, all intercourse with them was interdicted.

But before any final answer could be obtained from congress, Sir Henry Clinton had taken the resolution of evacuating Philadelphia. Accordingly, on the tenth of June, after having made all necessary preparations, the army marched out of the city, and crossed the Delaware before noon, with all its baggage and other incumbrances. General Washington, apprised of this design, had dispatched expresses into the Jerseys, with orders to collect all the force which could be assembled in order to obstruct the march of the enemy. After various movements on both sides, Sir Henry Clinton, with the royal army, arrived on the 27th of June, at a place called Freehold; where, judging that the enemy would attack him, he encamped in a very strong situation. Here General Washington determined to make an attack as soon as the army had again begun its march. The night was spent in making the necessary preparations, and Gen.

conciliatory bill. It was universally looked upon as a national disgrace; and some even tore the cockades from their hats, and trampled them under their feet as a token of their indignation. By the colonists it was received with indifference. The British commissioners endeavoured to make it as public as possible; and the congress, as formerly, ordered it to be printed in all the newspapers. On this occasion Governor Tryon inclosed several copies of the bill to General Washington in a letter, intreating him that he would allow them to be circulated; to which the General returned for answer a copy of a newspaper in which the bill was printed, with the resolutions of congress upon it. These were, That whoever presumed to make a separate agreement with Britain should be deemed a public enemy; that the United States could not with any propriety keep correspondence with the commissioners until their independence was acknowledged, and the British fleets and armies removed from America. At the same time, the colonies were warned not to suffer themselves to be deceived into security by any offers that might be made; but to use their utmost endeavours to send their quotas with all diligence into the field. The individuals with whom the commissioners conversed on the subject of the conciliatory bill, generally returned for answer, that the day of reconciliation was past; and that the haughtiness of Britain had extinguished all filial regard in the breasts of Americans.

About this time also Mr Silas Dean arrived from France with two copies of the treaty of commerce and alliance to be signed by congress

Advice

of the most agreeable nature were also
 from various parts, representing in the
 most favourable light the dispositions of the Par-
 liamentary powers; all of whom, it was said, wished
 to see the independence of America settled upon
 a permanent basis. Considering the situ-
 ation of matters with the colonists at this time,
 therefore, it was no wonder the commissioners
 found themselves unable to accomplish the errand
 for which they came. Their proposals were
 all rejected, themselves treated as spies, and
 a vain attempt by governor Johnson, one
 of the commissioners, to bribe several members
 of Congress, all intercourse with them was inter-
 dicted.

Before any final answer could be obtained
 from Congress, Sir Henry Clinton had taken the
 resolution of evacuating Philadelphia. Accord-
 ingly on the tenth of June, after having made
 the necessary preparations, the army marched out
 of the city, and crossed the Delaware before
 with all its baggage and other necessaries.
 General Washington, apprized of this
 march, had dispatched express into the Jerseys
 with orders to collect all the force which
 could be assembled in order to obstruct the march
 of the enemy. After various movements on
 both sides, Sir Henry Clinton, with the royal
 army, arrived on the 27th of June, at a place
 called Red Bank; where, judging that the enemy
 could attack him, he encamped in a very
 disadvantageous situation. As General Washington de-
 termined to make an attack as soon as the army
 could be assembled to begin its march. The night was spent
 in making the necessary preparations, and Gen.

Lee with his division, was ordered to be ready by day-break. But Sir Henry Clinton, justly apprehending the chief object of the enemy was the baggage, committed it to the care of General Knyphausen, whom he ordered to set out early in the morning while he followed with the rest of the army. The attack was accordingly made but the British general had taken such care to arrange his troops properly, and so effectively supported his forces when engaged with the Americans, that the latter not only made no impression, but were with difficulty preserved from a total defeat by the advance of General Washington with the whole army. The British troops effected their retreat in the night with the loss of 300 men, of whom many died through mere fatigue, without any wound. In this action General Lee was charged by General Washington with disobedience and misconduct in retreating before the British army. He was tried by court-martial, and sentenced to a temporary suspension from his command. After they had arrived at Sandy-Hook, a bridge of boats was by Lord Howe's directions thrown from thence over the channel which separated the island from the main land, and the troops were conveyed aboard the fleet, after which they sailed to New York.

After sending some light detachments to watch the enemy's motions, Gen. Washington marched towards the North River, where a great force had been collected to join him, and where it was now expected that some very capital operation would take place.

In the mean time France had set about her preparations for the assistance of the American

On the 14th of April Count d'Estaing had sailed from Toulon with a strong squadron of ships of the line and frigates, and arrived on the coast of Virginia, in the beginning of July, whilst the British fleet was employed in conveying the forces from Sandy-Hook to New-York. It consisted of one ship of 90 guns, one of 80, six of 74, and four of 64, besides several large frigates; and exclusive of its complement of sailors, had 6000 marines and soldiers on board. To oppose this the British had only six ships of 64 guns, three of 50, and two of 40, with some frigates and sloops. Notwithstanding this inferiority, however, the British admiral posted himself so advantageously, and showed such superior skill, that d'Estaing did not think proper to attack him; particularly, as the pilots informed him that it was impracticable to carry his large ships over the bar into the Hook, and General Washington pressed him to sail for Newport. He therefore remained at anchor four miles off Sandy-Hook till the 22d of July, without effecting any thing more than the capture of some vessels, which, through ignorance of his arrival, fell into his hands.

The next attempt of the French admiral was, in conjunction with the Americans, on Rhode-Island. It was proposed that d'Estaing, with the 6000 troops he had with him, should make a descent on the southern part of the island, while a body of the Americans should take possession of the north; at the same time the French squadron was to enter the harbour of Newport, and take and destroy all the British shipping. On the 8th of August the French admiral entered the harbour as was proposed, but found

himself unable to do any material damage. Lord Howe, however, instantly set sail for Rhode-Island; and d'Estaing, confiding in his superiority, immediately came out of the harbour to attack him. A violent storm parted the two fleets, and did so much damage that they were rendered totally unfit for action. The French, however, suffered most; and several of their ships being afterwards attacked singly by the British, very narrowly escaped being taken. On the 20th of August he returned to Newport in a very shattered condition; and, not thinking himself safe there, sailed two days after for Boston. General Sullivan had landed in the mean time on the northern part of Rhode-Island with 13,000 men. On the 17th of August they began their operations by erecting batteries, and making their approaches to the British lines. But General Pigot, who commanded in Newport, had taken such effectual care to secure himself on the land-side, that without the assistance of a marine force it was altogether impossible to attack him with any probability of success. The conduct of d'Estaing, therefore who had abandoned them when master of the harbour, gave the greatest disgust to the people of New-England, and Sullivan began to think of a retreat. On perceiving his intentions, the garrison sallied out upon him with so much vigour, that it was not without difficulty that he effected his retreat. He had not been long gone when Sir Henry Clinton arrived with a body of 4000 men; which, had it arrived sooner, would have enabled the British commander to have gained a decisive advantage over him, as well as to have destroyed the tow

of Providence, which, by its vicinity to Rhode-Island, and the enterprizes which were continually projected and carried on in that place, kept the inhabitants of Rhode-Island in continual alarms.

The first British expedition was to Buzzard's-Bay, on the coast of New England and neighbourhood of Rhode-Island. Here they destroyed a great number of privateers and merchantmen, magazines, with store-houses, &c.; whence proceeding to a fertile and populous island, called Martha's-Vineyard, they carried off 2000 sheep and 300 black cattle. Another expedition took place up the North-River, under Lord Cornwallis and General Knyphausen; the principal event of which was, the destruction of a regiment of American cavalry known by the name of Washington's Light Horse. A third expedition was directed to Little Egg-Harbour in New-Jersey, a place noted for privateers, the destruction of which was its principal intention. It was conducted by Captains Ferguson and Collins, and ended in the destruction of the American vessels, as well as of the place itself. At the same time part of another body of American troops, called Pulaski's legion, was surpris'd and a great number of them put to the sword.

The Americans had in the beginning of the year projected the conquest of West-Florida; and one Captain Willing, with a party of resolute men, had made a successful incursion into the country. This awakened the attention of the British to the southern colonies, and an expedition against them was resolv'd on. Georgia was the place of destination; and the more effectively

fectually to ensure success, Colonel Campbell, with a sufficient force, under convoy of some ships of war, commanded by Commodore Hyde Parker, embarked at New-York; while General Prevost, who commanded in East-Florida, was directed to set out with all the force he could spare. The armament from New-York arrived off the coast of Georgia in the month of December; and though the Americans were very strongly posted in an advantageous situation on the shore, the British troops made good their landing, and advanced towards Savannah the capital of the province. That very day they defeated the force of the provincials which opposed them; and took possession of the town with such celerity, that the Americans had not time to execute a resolution they had taken of setting it on fire. In ten days the whole province of Georgia was reduced; Sunbury alone excepted; and this was also brought under subjection by General Prevost in his march northward. Every proper method was taken to secure the tranquility of the country; and rewards were offered for apprehending committee and assembly men, or such as they judged most inimical to the British interests. On the arrival of General Prevost, the command of the troops naturally devolved on him as the senior officer; and the conquest of Carolina was next projected.

In this attempt there was no small probability of success. The country contained a great number of friends to government, who now eagerly embraced the opportunity of declaring themselves, many of the inhabitants of Georgia had joined the royal standard; and there wa

not in the province any considerable body of provincial forces capable of opposing the efforts of regular and well-disciplined troops. On the first view of General Prevost's approach, the loyalists assembled in a body, imagining themselves able to stand their ground until their allies should arrive; but in this they were disappointed. The Americans attacked and defeated them with the loss of half their number. The remainder retreated into Georgia; and, after undergoing many difficulties, at last effected a junction with the British forces.

In the mean time, General Lincoln, with a considerable body of American troops, had encamped within 20 miles of the town of Savannah; and another strong party had posted themselves at a place called *Briar's Creek*, farther up the river of the same name. Thus the extent of the British government was likely to be circumscribed within very narrow bounds. General Prevost therefore determined to dislodge the party at Briar's Creek: and the latter, trusting to their strong situation, and being remiss in their guard, suffered themselves to be surprised on the 30th of March 1779; when they were utterly routed with the loss of more than 300 killed and taken, besides a great number drowned in the river or the swamps. The whole artillery, stores, baggage and almost all the arms of this unfortunate party were taken, so that they could no more make any stand; and thus the province of Georgia was once more freed from the Americans, and a communication opened with those places in Carolina where the royalists chiefly resided.

The

The victory at Briar's Creek proved of considerable service to the British cause. Great numbers of the loyalists joined the army and considerably increased its force. Hence he was enabled to stretch his posts further up the river, and to guard all the principal passes: so that General Lincoln was reduced to a state of inaction; and at last moved off towards the Augusta, in order to protect the provincial assembly, which was obliged to sit in that place, the capital being now in the hands of the British.

Lincoln had no sooner quitted his post, than it was judged a proper time by the British general to put in execution the grand scheme which had been meditated against Carolina. many difficulties indeed lay in his way. The river Savannah was so swelled by the excessive rains of the season, that it seemed impassable; the opposite shore for a great way, was so full of swamps and marshes, that no army could march over it without the greatest difficulty; and, to render the passage still more difficult, General Moultrie was left with a considerable body of troops in order to oppose the enemy's attempts. But in spite of every opposition, the constancy and perseverance of the British troops at last prevailed. General Moultrie was obliged to retire towards Charleston; and the pursuing army after having waded through the marshes for some time, at last arrived in an open country, through which they pursued their march with great rapidity, towards the capital; while General Lincoln made preparations to march to its relief.

Certain intelligence of the danger to which Charleston was exposed, animated the American
general

general. A chosen body of infantry, mounted on horseback for the greater expedition, was dispatched before him; while Lincoln himself followed with all the forces he could collect. General Moultrie too, with the troops he had brought from Savannah, and some others he had collected since his retreat from thence, had taken possession of all the avenues leading to Charleston, and prepared for a vigorous defence. But all opposition proved ineffectual; and the British army was allowed to come within cannon shot of Charleston on the 12th of May.

The town was now summoned to surrender, and the inhabitants would gladly have agreed to observe a neutrality during the rest of the war, and would have engaged also for the rest of the province. But these terms not being accepted, they made preparations for a vigorous defence. It was not, however, in the power of the British commander at this time to make an attack with any prospect of success. His artillery was not of sufficient weight; there were no ships to support his attack by land; and General Lincoln advancing rapidly with a superior army, threatened to inclose him between his own force and the town; so that should he fail in his first attempt, certain destruction would be the consequence. For these reasons he withdrew his forces from before the town, and took possession of two islands, called *St James's* and *St John's*, lying to the southward; where having waited some time, his force was augmented by the arrival of two frigates. With these he determined to make himself master of Port-Royal, another island possessed of an excellent harbour, and many other

other natural advantages, from its situation also commanding all the sea-coast from Charleston to Savannah River. The American general, however, did not allow this to be accomplished without opposition. Perceiving that his opponent had occupied an advantageous post on St John's island preparatory to his enterprize against Port-Royal, he attempted, on the 20th of June, to dislodge them from it; but, after an obstinate attack, the provincials were obliged to retire with considerable loss. On this occasion the success of the British arms was in a great measure owing to an armed float, which galled the right flank of the enemy so effectually, that they could direct their efforts only against the strongest part of the lines, which proved impregnable to their attacks. This disappointment was instantly followed by the loss of Port-Royal, which General Prevost took possession of, and put his troops into proper stations, waiting for the arrival of such reinforcements as were necessary for the intended attack on Charleston.

The profligate conduct of the refugees and the officers and soldiers of the British, in plundering the houses of individuals, during their incursion, is incredible. Negroes were seduced or forced from their masters; furniture and plate were seized without decency or authority; and the most infamous violations of every law of honour and honesty were openly perpetrated. Individuals thus accumulated wealth, but the reputation of the British arms incurred an everlasting stigma.

In the mean time Count d'Estaing, who as we have already observed, had put into Boston har-
bou

bour to refit, had used his utmost efforts to ingratiate himself with the inhabitants of that city. Zealous also in the cause of his master, he had published a proclamation to be dispersed through Canada, inviting the people to return to their original friendship with France, and declaring that all who renounced their allegiance to Great Britain should certainly find a protector in the king of France. All his endeavours, however, proved insufficient at this time to produce any revolution, or even to form a party of any consequence among the Canadians.

As soon as the French admiral had refitted his fleet, he took the opportunity, while that of Admiral Byron had been shattered by a storm, of sailing to the West-Indies. During his operations there, the Americans having represented his conduct as totally unserviceable to them, he received orders from Europe to assist the colonies with all possible speed.

In compliance with these orders, he directed his course towards Georgia, with a design to recover that province out of the hands of the enemy, and to put it, as well as South Carolina, in such a posture of defence as would effectually secure them from any future attack. This seemed to be an easy matter, from the little force with which he knew he should be opposed; and the next object in contemplation was no less than the destruction of the British fleet and army at New York, and their total expulsion from the continent of America. Full of these hopes, the French commander arrived off the coast of Georgia with a fleet of 22 sail of the line and 10 large frigates. His arrival was so little expected, that several vessels

vessels laden with provisions and military stores fell into his hands; the Experiment also, a vessel of 50 guns, commanded by Sir James Wallace, was taken after a stout resistance. On the continent, the British troops were divided. General Prevost, with an inconsiderable part, remained at Savannah; but the main force was under Colonel Maitland at Port Royal. On the first appearance of the French fleet, an express was dispatched to Colonel Maitland: but it was intercepted by the Americans; so that before he could set out in order to join the commander in chief, the Americans had secured most of the passes by land, while the French fleet effectually blocked up the passage by sea. But, by taking advantage of creeks and inlets and marching over land, he arrived just in time to relieve Savannah.

D'Estaing had allowed General Prevost 24 hours to deliberate whether he should capitulate or not. This time the general employed in making the best preparations he could for a defence; and during this time it was that Colonel Maitland arrived. D'Estaing's summons was now rejected. The garrison now consisted of 3000 men, all of approved valour and experience, while the united force of the French and Americans did not amount to 10,000. The event was answerable to the expectations of the British general. Having the advantage of a strong fortification and excellent engineers, the fire of the allies made so little impression that D'Estaing resolved to bombard the town, and a battery of nine mortars was erected for the purpose. This produced a request from General Prevost, that the women and children might be allowed to retire to a place

of safety. But the allied commanders, from motives of policy, refused compliance; and they resolved to give a general assault. This was accordingly attempted on the 9th of October; but the assailants were every where repulsed with such slaughter, that 1200 were killed and wounded; among the former were Count Pulaski, the celebrated conspirator against the reigning king of Poland, and among the latter was D'Estaing himself.

This disaster entirely overthrew the sanguine hopes of the Americans and French; but so far from reproaches or animosity arising between them their common misfortune seemed to increase their confidence and esteem for each other; a circumstance fairly to be ascribed to the conciliatory conduct of General Lincoln upon every occasion. After waiting eight days longer, both parties prepared for a retreat; the French to their shipping, and the Americans into Carolina.

While the allies were thus unsuccessfully employed in the southern colonies, their antagonists were no less assiduous in distressing them in the northern parts. Sir George Collier was sent with a fleet, carrying on board Gen. Matthews, with a body of land forces, into the province of Virginia. Their first attempt was on the town of Portsmouth; where though the Americans had destroyed some ships of great value, the British troops arrived in time to save a great number of others. On this occasion about 120 vessels of different sizes were burnt, and 20 carried off; and an immense quantity of provisions designed for the use of General Washington's army was

either destroyed or carried off, together with a great variety of naval and military stores. The fleet and army returned with little or no loss to New-York.

The success with which this expedition was attended, soon gave encouragement to attempt another. The Americans had for some time been employed in the erection of two strong forts on the river; the one at Verplanks Neck on the east, and the other at Stoney Point on the west side. These when completed would have been of the utmost service to the Americans, as commanding the principal pass, called the *King's Ferry*, between the northern and southern colonies. At present, however, they were not in a condition to make any effectual defence; and it was therefore determined to attack them before the works should be completed. The force employed on this occasion was divided into two bodies; one of which directed its course against Verplanks, and the other against Stoney Point. The former was commanded by general Vaughan, the latter by General Patterson, while the shipping was under the direction of Sir George Collier. General Vaughan met with no resistance, the Americans abandoning their works, and setting fire to every thing combustible that they could not carry off. At Stoney Point, however, a vigorous defence was made, though the garrison was at last obliged to capitulate upon honourable conditions. To secure the possession of this last, which was the more important of the two, General Clinton removed from his former situation, and encamped in such a manner that General Washington could not give any assistance. The
Americans

Americans, however revenged themselves by distressing, with their numerous privateers, the trade to New-York.

This occasioned a third expedition to Connecticut, where these privateers were chiefly built and harboured. The command was given to Governor Tryon and to General Garth, an officer of known valour and experience. Under convoy of a considerable number of armed vessels they landed at Newhaven, where they demolished the batteries that had been erected to oppose them, and destroyed the shipping and naval stores but they spared the town itself, as the inhabitants had abstained from firing out of their houses upon the troops. From Newhaven they marched to Fairfield, where they proceeded as before, reducing the town also to ashes. Norfolk was next attacked, which in like manner was reduced to ashes; as was also Greenfield, a small sea port in the neighbourhood. Such repeated conflagrations, wantonly and cruelly spread, served only to increase the disgust which was felt by every friend to the American cause.

These successes proved very alarming as well as detrimental to the Americans; so that General Washington determined at all events to drive the enemy from Stoney Point. For this purpose he sent Gen. Wayne with a detachment of chosen men, directing him to attempt the recovery of it by surprise. On this occasion the Americans showed spirit and a resolution exceeding any thing either party had performed during the course of the war. Though after the capture of it by the British the fortifications of this place had been completed, and were very strong, they attacked the

enemy with bayonets, after passing through a heavy fire of musquetry and grapeshot; and, in spite of all opposition, obliged the surviving part of the garrison, amounting to 500 men, to surrender themselves prisoners of war.

Though the Americans did not at present attempt to retain possession at Stoney Point, the success they had met with in the enterprise emboldened them to make a similar attempt upon Paulus Hook, a fortified post on the Jersey side, opposite to New-York; but, although the heroism of the enterprise and the spirit with which it was executed deserves applause, after having completely surpris'd the posts, the American commander, Major Lee, finding it impossible to retain them, made an orderly retreat, with about 161 prisoners, among whom were seven officers.

Another expedition of greater importance was now projected on the part of the Americans. This was against a Post on the river Penobscot, on the borders of Nova Scotia, of which the British had lately taken possession, and where they had begun to erect a fort which threatened to be a very great inconvenience to the colonists. The armament destined against it was so soon got in readiness, that Colonel Maclane, the commanding officer at Penobscot, found himself obliged to drop the execution of part of his scheme; and instead of a regular fort, to content himself with putting the works already constructed in as good a posture of defence as possible. The Americans could not effect a landing without a great deal of difficulty, and bringing the guns of their largest vessels to bear upon the shore.

As soon as this was done, however, they erected several batteries, and kept up a brisk fire for the space of a fortnight; after which they proposed to give a general assault: but before this could be effected, they perceived Sir George Collier with a British fleet sailing up the river to attack them. On this they instantly embarked their artillery and military stores, sailing up the river as far as possible in order to avoid him. They were so closely pursued, however, that not a single vessel could escape, so that the whole fleet, consisting of 19 armed vessels and 24 transports, was destroyed; most of them indeed being blown up of themselves. The soldiers and sailors were obliged to wander through immense deserts, where they suffered much for want of provisions; and to add to their calamities, a quarrel broke out between the soldiers and seamen concerning the cause of their disaster, which ended in a violent fray, wherein a great number were killed.

To add to the distress of the Americans, the Indians, accompanied by a number of refugees, attacked the back settlements of Pennsylvania. No effectual measures being taken to repress the hostile spirit of the Indians, numbers joined the ory refugees, and with these commenced their horrid depredation and hostilities upon the back-settlers, being headed by col. Butler and Brandt, a half blooded Indian, of desperate courage, and of a cruelty beyond example. Their expeditions were carried on to great advantage, by the exact knowledge which the refugees possessed of every object of their enterprise, and the immediate intelligence they received from their

friends on the spot. The weight of their hostilities fell upon the fine, new, and flourishing settlement of Wyoming, situated on the eastern branch of the Susquehanna, in a most beautiful country and delightful climate. It was first settled and cultivated with great ardor, by a number of people from Connecticut, which claimed the territory as included in its original grant by Charles II. The settlement consisted of eight townships, each five miles square, beautifully placed on each side of the river. It had increased so by a rapid population, that they sent a thousand men to serve in the continental army. To provide against the dangers of their remote situation, four forts were constructed to cover them from the irruptions of the Indians. But it was their unhappiness, to have a considerable mixture of royalists amongst them; and the two parties were actuated by sentiments of the most violent animosity which was not confined to particular families or places: but creeping within the roofs and to the hearths and floor where it was least to be expected, served equally to poison the sources of domestic security and happiness, and to cancel the laws of nature and humanity.

They had frequent and timely warnings of the danger to which they were exposed by sending their best men to so great a distance. The quiet had been interrupted by the Indians, joined by marauding parties of their own countrymen in the preceding year: and it was only by vigorous opposition, in a course of several skirmishes, that they had been preserved from several tories, and others not before suspected had then and since abandoned the settlement.

and beside a perfect knowledge of all their particular circumstances, carried along with them such a stock of private resentment, as could not fail of directing the fury, and even giving an edge to the cruelty of their Indian and other inveterate enemies. An unusual number of strangers had come among them under various pretences, whose behaviour became so suspicious, that upon being taken up and examined, such evidence appeared against several of them, of their acting in concert with the enemy, on a scheme for the destruction of the settlements, that about twenty were sent off to Connecticut to be there imprisoned and tried for their lives, while the remainder were expelled. These measures excited the rage of the tories in general to the most extreme degree; and the threats formerly denounced against the settlers were now renewed with aggravated vengeance.

As the time approached for the final catastrophe, the Indians practised unusual treachery. For several weeks previous to the intended attack, they repeatedly sent small parties to the settlement, charged with the strongest professions of friendship. These parties, beside attempting to lull the people into security, answered the purposes of communicating with their friends, and of observing the present state of affairs. The settlers, however, were not insensible to the danger. They had taken the alarm, and col. Zebulon Butler had several times written letters to congress, and Gen. Washington, acquainting them with ~~the~~ the danger the settlement was in, and requesting assistance; but the letters were never received, having been intercepted by the Pennsylvania

sylvania Tories. A little before the main attack, some small parties made sudden irruptions, and committed several robberies and murders; and from ignorance or a contempt of all ties whatever, massacred the wife and five children of one of the persons sent for trial to Connecticut in their own cause.

At length, in the beginning of July, the enemy suddenly appeared in full force on the Susquehanna, headed by col. John Butler, a Connecticut Tory, and cousin to col. Zeb. Butler, the second in command in the settlement. He was assisted by most of those leaders, who had rendered themselves terrible in the present frontier war. Their force was about 1600 men; near a fourth Indians, led by their own chiefs; the others were so disguised and painted as not to be distinguished from the Indians, excepting their officers who being dressed in regimentals, carried the appearance of regulars. One of the smaller forts, garrisoned chiefly by Tories, was given up or rather betrayed. Another was taken by storm, and all but the women and children massacred in the most inhuman manner.

Colonel Zeb. Butler, leaving a small number to guard fort Wilkesborough, crossed the river with about 400 men, and marched into Kingston fort, whither the women, children and defenceless of all forts crowded for protection. He suffered himself to be enticed by his cousin to abandon the fortress. He agreed to march out and hold a conference with the enemy in the open field (at so great a distance from the fort, as to shut out all possibility of protection from it) upon their withdrawing according to their own proposal,

posal, in order to the holding of a parley for the conclusion of a treaty. He at the same time marched out about 400 men well armed, being nearly the whole strength of the garrison, to guard his person to the place of parley, such was his distrust of the enemy's designs. On his arrival he found no body to treat with him, and yet advanced toward the foot of the mountain, where at a distance he saw a flag, the holders of which, seemingly afraid of treachery on his side, retired as he advanced; whilst he, endeavouring to remove this pretended ill-impression, pursued the flag, till his party were thoroughly inclosed, when he was suddenly freed from his delusion, by finding it attacked at once on every side. He and his men, notwithstanding the surprize and danger, fought with resolution and bravery, and kept up so continual and heavy a fire for three quarters of an hour, that they seemed to gain a marked superiority. In this critical moment; a soldier, through a sudden impulse of fear, or premeditated treachery, cried out aloud, "the colonel has ordered a retreat." The fate of the party was now at once determined. In the state of confusion that ensued, an unresisted slaughter commenced, while, the enemy broke in on all sides without obstruction. Col. Zeb. Butler, and about seventy of his men escaped; the latter got across the river to fort Wilkesborough, the colonel made his way to fort Kingston; which was invested the next day on the land side.—The enemy, to sadden the drooping spirits of the weak remaining garrison, sent in for their contemplation the bloody scalps of one hundred and ninety-six of their late friends and comrades.—They kept

kept up a continual fire upon the fort the whole day. In the evening the colonel quitted the fort and went down the river with his family. He is thought to be the only officer that escaped.

Colonel Nathan Dennison, who succeeded to the command, seeing the impossibility of an effectual defence, went out with a flag to col. John Butler, to know what terms he would grant on a surrender; to which application Butler answered with more than savage phlegm in two short words—*the hatchet*.—Dennison having defended the fort, till most of the garrison were killed or disabled was compelled to surrender at discretion. Some of the unhappy persons in the fort were carried away alive; but the barbarous conquerors, to save the trouble of murder in detail, shut up the rest promiscuously in the houses and barracks; which having set on fire, they enjoyed the savage pleasure of beholding the whole consumed in one general blaze.

They then crossed the river to the only remaining fort, Wilksborough, which in hopes of mercy surrendered without demanding any conditions. They found about seventy continental soldiers, who had been engaged merely for the defence of the frontiers, whom they butchered with every circumstance of horrid cruelty. The remainder of the men, with the women and children, were shut up as before in the houses, which being set on fire, they perished altogether in the flames.

A general scene of devastation was now spread through all the townships. Fire, sword, and the other different instruments of destruction alternately triumphed. The settlements of the
toric

ories alone generally escaped, and appeared as islands in the midst of the surrounding ruin. The merciless ravagers having destroyed the main objects of their cruelty, directed their animosity to every part of living nature belonging to them; shot and destroyed some of their cattle, and cut out the tongues of others, leaving them still alive to prolong the agonies.

CHAPTER VIII.

Spain joins the Confederacy against Great Britain— Expedition of the British against Charleston— Attack on Staten-Island— Proceedings of Congress— Arrival of the French Troops— Gen. Gates defeated— Gen. Arnold deserts— Unhappy Fate of Major André— Arnold's Reasons for his Conduct— other Reasons— Capture of Mr. Laurens.

THUS the arms of America and France being almost every where unsuccessful, the independency of the former seemed yet to be in danger, notwithstanding the assistance of so powerful an ally, when further encouragement was given by the accession of Spain to the confederacy against Great Britain in the month of July 1779. The first effect of this appeared in an invasion of West Florida by the Spaniards in September 1779. As the country was in no state of defence, the enemy easily made themselves masters of the whole, almost without opposition. Their next

next enterprise, was against the Bay of Honduras, where the British logwood-cutters were settled. These finding themselves too weak to resist, applied to the governor of Jamaica for relief, who sent them a supply of men, ammunition, and military stores, under Captain Dalrymple. Before the arrival of this detachment, the principal settlement in those parts, called *St George's Key*, had been taken by the Spaniards and re-taken by the British. In his way Captain Dalrymple fell in with a Squadron of Admiral Parker in search of some register ships richly laden; but which, retreating into the harbour of Omoa, were too strongly protected by the fort to be attacked with safety. A project was then formed in conjunction with the people of Honduras, to reduce this fort. The design was to surprise it; but the Spaniards having discovered them, they were obliged to fight. Victory quickly declared for the British; but the fortifications were so strong, that the artillery they had brought along with them were found too light to make any impression. It was then determined to try the success of an escalade; and this was executed with so much spirit, that the Spaniards stood astonished without making any resistance, and, in spite of all the efforts of the officers, threw down their arms and surrendered. The spoil was immense, being valued at three millions of dollars. The Spaniards chiefly lamented the loss of 250 quintals of quicksilver; a commodity indispensably necessary in the working of their gold and silver mines, so that they offered to ransom it at any price; but this was refused, as well as the ransom of the fort, though the governor offered

300,000 dollars for it. A small garrison was left for the defence of the place: but it was quickly attacked by a superior force, and obliged to evacuate it, though not without destroying every thing that could be of use to the enemy; spiking the guns, and even locking the gates of the fort and carrying off the keys. All this was done in sight of the besiegers; after which the garrison embarked without the loss of a man.

As no operations of any consequence took place this year in the province of New-York, the congress made use of the opportunity to dispatch General Sullivan with a considerable force, in order to take vengeance on the Indians for their ravages and depredations. Of this the Indians were apprised; and collecting all their strength, resolved to come to a decisive engagement. Accordingly they took a strong post in the most woody and mountainous part of the country; erecting a breast-work in their front, of large logs of wood extending half a mile in length, while their right flank was covered by a river, and the left by a hill of difficult access. This advantageous position they had taken by the advice of the refugees who were among them, and of whom 200 or 300 were present in the battle.

Thus posted, the Indians waited the approach of the American army: but the latter having brought some artillery along with them, played it against the breast-work of the enemy with such success, that in two hours it was almost destroyed; and at the same time a party having reached the top of the hill, they became apprehensive of being surrounded, on which they instantly fled with precipitation, leaving a great number of

killed and wounded behind them. The Americans after this battle met with no further resistance of any consequence. They were suffered to proceed without interruption. On entering the country of the Indians, it appeared that they had been acquainted with agriculture and the arts of peace far beyond what had been supposed. From General Sullivan's account it was learned, that the Indian houses were large, convenient, and even elegant; their grounds were excellently cultivated, and their gardens abounded in fruit-trees and vegetables of all kinds fit for food. The whole of this fine country would now have been converted into a desert, had it not been for the humane forbearance of General Hand and Colonel Durbin. The desolation, however, was extensive, and only to be justified by the savage character and example of their enemy.

We must now take a view of the transactions in the southern colonies; to which the war was, in the year 1780, so effectually transferred, that the operations there became at last decisive. The success of General Prevost in advancing to the very capital of South-Carolina has been already related, together with the obstacles which prevented him from becoming master of it at that time. Towards the end of the year 1779, however, Sir Henry Clinton set sail from New-York with a considerable body of troops, intended for the attack of Charleston, South-Carolina, in a fleet of ships of war and transports under the command of Vice-admiral Arbuthnot. They had a very tedious voyage; the weather was uncommonly bad; several of the transports were lost as were also the greater part of the horses which
the

they carried with them, intended for cavalry or other public uses ; and an ordnance-ship likewise stranded at sea. Having arrived at Savannah, where they endeavoured to repair the damages sustained on their voyage, they proceeded from thence on the 10th of February, 1780, to North Bluff, the place of debarkation which had been previously appointed. They had a favourable and speedy passage thither : and though it required time to have the bar explored and the channel marked, the transports all entered the harbour the next day ; and the army took possession of St John's island, about 30 miles from Charleston, without opposition. Preparations were then made for passing the squadron over Charleston bar, where the high-water spring-tides were only 19 feet deep ; but no opportunity offered of going into the harbour till the 20th of March, when it was effected without any accident, though the American galleys continually attempted to prevent the English boats from founding the channel. The British troops had previously removed from John's to James's island ; and on the 29th of the same month they effected their landing on Charleston neck. On the 1st of April they broke ground within 800 yards of the American works ; and by the 8th the besiegers guns were mounted in battery.

As soon as the army began to erect their batteries against the town, Admiral Arbuthnot embraced the first favourable opportunity of passing Sullivan's island, upon which there was a strong fort of batteries, the chief defence of the harbour. He weighed on the 9th, with the *Roebuck*, *Richmond*, and *Romulus*, *Blonde*, *Virginia*, *Raleigh*,
and

and Sandwich armed ship, the Renown bringing up the rear ; and, passing thro' a severe fire, anchored in about two hours under James's island, with the loss of 27 seamen killed and wounded. The Richmond's fore-top-mast was shot away, and the ships in general sustained damage in their masts and rigging, though not materially in their hulls. But the Acetus transport, having on board some naval stores, grounded within gunshot of Sullivan's island, and received so much damage that she was obliged to be abandoned and burnt.

On the 10th, Sir Henry Clinton (having received a reinforcement of 3000 men from New York) and Admiral Arbuthnot summoned the town to surrender to his majesty's arms ; but Major-general Lincoln, who commanded in Charleston, returned them an answer, declaring it to be his intention to defend the place. The batteries were now opened against the town ; and from their effect the fire of the American advanced works considerably abated. It appears that the number of troops under the command of Lincoln were by far too few for defending works of such extent as those of Charleston ; and that many of these were men little accustomed to military service, and very ill provided with clothes and other necessaries. Lincoln had been for some time expecting reinforcements and supplies from Virginia and other places : but they came in very slowly. Earl Cornwallis, and Lieutenant-colonel Tarleton under him, were also extremely active in intercepting such reinforcements and supplies as were sent to the American general. They totally defeated a considerable body

of cavalry and militia which was proceeding to the relief of the town; and also made themselves masters of some posts which gave them in a great degree the command of the country, by which means great supplies of provisions fell into their hands. Tarleton was himself, however defeated in a rencounter, with Lieutenant Colonel Washington, at the head of a regular corps of horse.

Such was the state of things, and Fort Sullivan had also been taken by the king's troops, when on the 18th of May General Clinton again summoned the town to surrender; an offer being made, as had been done before, that if they surrendered, the lives and property of the inhabitants should be preserved to them. Articles of capitulation were then proposed by General Lincoln; but the terms were not agreed to by General Clinton. At length, however, the town being closely invested on all sides, and the preparations to storm it in every part being in great forwardness, and the ships ready to move to the assault, General Lincoln, who had been applied to for that purpose by the inhabitants, surrendered it on such articles of capitulation as General Clinton had before agreed to. This was on the 4th of May, which was one month and two days after the town had been first summoned to surrender.

A large quantity of ordnance, arms, and ammunition, was found in Charleston; and, according to Sr Henry Clinton's account, the number of prisoners taken in Charleston amounted to 6018 men, exclusive of near a thousand sailors in arms; but according to General Lincoln's ac-

count transmitted to the congress, the whole number of continental troops taken prisoners amounted to no more than 197. The remainder, therefore, included in General Clinton's account, consisted of militia and inhabitants of the town. Several American frigates were also taken or destroyed in the harbour of Charleston.

The loss of Charleston evidently excited a considerable alarm in America: and their popular writers, particularly the author of the celebrated performance entitled *Common Sense*, in some other pieces made use of it as a powerful argument to lead them to more vigorous exertions against Great Britain, that they might the more effectually and certainly secure their independence.

While Sir Henry Clinton was employed in his voyage to Charleston, and in the siege of that place, the garrison at New-York seem not to have been wholly free from apprehensions for their own safety. An intense frost, accompanied with great falls of snow, began about the middle of December 1779, and shut up the navigation of the port of New-York from the sea, within a few days after the departure of Admiral Arbuthnot and General Clinton. The severity of the weather increased to so great a degree, that towards the middle of January all communications with New-York by water were entirely cut off, and many new ones opened by the ice. The inhabitants could scarcely be said to be in an insular state. Horses with heavy carriages could go over the ice into the Jerseys from one island to another. The passage on the North River, even in the widest parts from New-York to Paul

Hook, which was 2000 yards, was about the 19th of January practicable for the heaviest cannon : an event which had been unknown in the memory of man. Provisions were soon after transported upon sledges, and a detachment of cavalry marched upon the ice from New-York to Staten-island, which was a distance of 11 miles.

The city of New-York being thus circumstanced, was considered as much exposed to attacks from the continental troops : and it was strongly reported that General Washington was meditating a great stroke upon New-York with his whole force, by different attacks. Some time before this, Major-general Pattison, commandant at New-York, having received an address from many of the inhabitants, offering to put themselves in military array, he thought the present a favourable opportunity of trying the sincerity of their professions. Accordingly he issued a proclamation, calling upon all the male inhabitants from 16 to 60 to take up arms. The requisition was so readily complied with, that in a few days 40 companies from the six wards of the city were enrolled, officered, and under arms, to the number of 2600, many substantial citizens serving in the ranks of each company. Other volunteer companies were formed; and the city was put into a very strong posture of defence.

No attack, however, was made upon New-York, whatever design might originally have been meditated ; but an attempt was made upon Staten-island, where there were about 1300 men, under the command of Brigadier-general Sterling, who were well entrenched. General Washington, whose

whose army was hutted at Morris-town, sent a detachment of 2700 men, with six pieces of cannon, two mortars, and some horses, commanded by Lord Sterling, who arrived at Staten-Island early in the morning of the 15th of January. The advanced posts of the British troops retired upon the approach of the Americans, who formed the line, and made some movements in the course of the day; but they withdrew in the night after having burnt one house, pillaged some others, and carried off with them about 200 head of cattle. Immediately on the arrival of the Americans on Staten-Island, Lieutenant-general Knyphausen had embarked 600 men to attempt a passage, and to support General Sterling: but the floating ice compelled them to return. It is, however, imagined, that the appearance of these transports, with the British troops on board, which the Americans could see towards the close of the day, induced the latter to make so precipitate a retreat.

After Charleston had surrendered to the king's troops, General Clinton issued two proclamations, and also circulated a hand-bill among the inhabitants of South-Carolina, in order to induce them to return to their allegiance, and to be ready to join the king's troops. It was said, that the helping hand of every man was wanted to re-establish peace and good government; and that as the commander in chief wished not to draw the king's friends into danger, while any doubt could remain of their success; so, now, that this was certain, he trusted that one and all would heartily join, and by a general concurrence give effect to such necessary measures for that purpose as from time to time might

might be pointed out. Those who had families were to form a militia to remain at home, and occasionally to assemble in their own districts, when required, under officers of their own choosing, for the maintainance of peace and good order. Those who had no families, and who could conveniently be spared for a time, it was presumed, would cheerfully assist his majesty's troops in driving their oppressors, acting under the authority of congress, and all the miseries of war, far from that colony. For this purpose it was said to be necessary that the young men should be ready to assemble when required, and to serve with the king's troops for any six months of the ensuing twelve that might be found requisite, under proper regulations. They might choose officers to each company to command them; and were to be allowed, when on service, pay, ammunition, and provisions, in the same manner as the king's troops. When they joined the army, each man was to be furnished with a certificate, declaring that he was only engaged to serve as a militia-man for the time specified; that he was not to be marched beyond North-Carolina and Georgia; and that when the time was out, he was freed from all claims whatever of military service; excepting the common and usual militia duty where he lived. He would then, it was said, have paid his debt to his country, and be entitled to enjoy undisturbed that peace, liberty, and property at home, which he had contributed to secure. The proclamations and publications of General Clinton appear to have produced some effect in South Carolina; though they probably operated chiefly upon those who were before not much inclined to the cause of American independence.

dependence. Two hundred and ten of the inhabitants of Charleston signed an address to General Clinton and Admiral Arbuthnot, soliciting to be re-admitted to the character and condition of British subjects, the inhabitants of that city having been hitherto considered as prisoners on parole; declaring their disapprobation of the doctrine of American independence; and expressing their regret, that after the repeal of those statutes which gave rise to the troubles in America, the overtures made by his majesty's commissioners had not been regarded by the congress. Sir Henry Clinton, in one of the proclamations issued at this time, declared, that if any person should thenceforward appear in arms in order to prevent the establishment of his majesty's government in that country, or should, under any pretence or authority whatsoever, attempt to compel any other person or persons to do so, or who should hinder or intimidate the king's faithful and loyal subjects from joining his forces, or otherwise performing those duties their allegiance required, such persons should be treated with the utmost severity and their estates be immediately seized in order to be confiscated.

Mean time the ravages of war did not prevent the Americans from paying some attention to the arts of peace. On the 4th of May an act passed by the council and house of representatives of Massachusetts-Bay for incorporating and establishing a society for the cultivation and promotion of the arts and sciences.

Some doubts having risen in the congress towards the close of the preceding year, about the propriety of their assembling in the city of Philadelphia, it was now resolved that they should

contin

continue to meet there : and a committee of three members was appointed to report a proper place where buildings might be provided for the reception of the congress, together with an estimate of the expence of providing such buildings, and the necessary offices for the several boards. It was also resolved by the congress, that a monument should be erected to the memory of their late General Richard Montgomery, who fell at Quebec, in testimony of his signal and important services to the United States of America, with an inscription expressive of his amiable character and heroic achievements ; and that the continental treasurers should be directed to advance a sum not exceeding L. 300 to Dr Franklin to defray the expence ; that gentleman being desired to cause the monument to be executed at Paris, or in some other part of France. It was likewise resolved by the Congress, that a court should be established for the trial of all appeals from the court of admiralty of the United States of America, in cases of capture ; to consist of three judges, appointed and commissioned by congress, and who were to take an oath of office ; and that the trials in this court should be determined by the usage of nations.

The difficulties of the congress and of the people of America had been greatly increased by the depreciation of their paper currency. At the time when the colonies engaged in a war with Great Britain, they had no regular civil governments established among them of sufficient energy to enforce the collection of taxes, or to provide funds for the redemption of such bills of credit as war necessities obliged them to issue. In consequence

quence of this state of things, their bills increased in quantity far beyond the sum necessary for the purpose of a circulating medium: and as they wanted at the same time specific funds to rest on for their redemption, they saw their paper-currency daily sink in value. The depreciation continued, by a kind of gradual progression, from the year 1777 to 1780: so that, at the latter period, the continental dollars were passed by common consent, in most parts of America, at the rate of at least $\frac{3}{4}$ ths below their nominal value. The impossibility of keeping up the credit of the currency to any fixed standard, occasioned great and almost insurmountable embarrassments in ascertaining the value of property, or carrying on trade with any sufficient certainty. Those who sold, and those who bought, were left without a rule whereon to form a judgment of their profit or their loss; and every species of commerce or exchange, whether foreign or domestic, was exposed to numberless and increasing difficulties. The consequences of the depreciation of the paper-currency were also felt with peculiar severity by such of the Americans as were engaged in their military services, and greatly augmented their other hardships. The requisitions made by the congress to the several colonies for supplies, were also far from being always regularly complied with: and their troops were not unfrequently in want of the most common necessaries; which naturally occasioned complaints and discontent among them. Such difficulties, resulted from their circumstances and situation, as perhaps no wisdom could have prevented. The cause of the American appears also to have suffered somewhat by their
depending

depending too much on temporary enlistments. But the congress endeavoured towards the close of the year 1780, to put their army upon a more permanent footing, and to give all the satisfaction to their officers and soldiers which their circumstances would permit. They appointed a committee for arranging their finances, and made some new regulations respecting the war-office and the treasury-board, and other public departments.

Notwithstanding the disadvantages under which they laboured, the Americans seemed to entertain no doubts but that they should be able to maintain their independency. The 4th of July was celebrated this year at Philadelphia with some pomp, as the anniversary of American independence. A commencement for conferring degrees in the arts was held the same day, in the hall of the university there; at which the president and members of the congress attended, and other persons in public offices. The Chevalier de la Luzerne, minister plenipotentiary from the French king to the United States, was also present on the occasion. A charge was publickly addressed by the provost of the university to the students; in which he said, that he could not but congratulate them “on that auspicious day, which, amidst the confusions and desolations of war, beheld learning beginning to revive; and animated them with the pleasing prospect of seeing the sacred lamp of science burning with a still brighter flame, and scattering its invigorating rays over the unexplored deserts of this extensive continent; until the whole world should be involved in the united blaze of knowledge, liberty, and religion. When he stretch-

ed his views forward (he said), and surveyed the rising glories of America, the enriching consequences of their determined struggle for liberty, the extensive fields of intellectual improvement and useful invention, in science and arts, in agriculture and commerce, in religion, and government, through which the unfettered mind would range, with increasing delight, in quest of the undiscovered treasure which yet lay concealed in the animal, vegetable, and mineral kingdoms of the new world; or in the other fertile sources of knowledge with which it abounded,—his heart swelled with the pleasing prospect, that the sons of that institution would distinguish themselves, in the different walks of life, by their literary contributions to the embellishments and increase of human happiness.”

On the 10th of July, M. Ternay, with a fleet consisting of seven ships of the line, besides frigates, and a large body of French troops, commanded by the Count de Rochambeau, arrived at Rhode-Island; and the following day 600 men were landed there. A committee from the general assembly of Rhode-Island was appointed to congratulate the French general upon his arrival: whereupon he returned an answer, which he informed them, that the king his master had sent him to the assistance of his good and faithful allies the United States of America. At present, he said, he only brought over the vanguard of a much greater force destined for their aid; and the king had ordered him to assure them, that his whole power should be exerted for their support. He added, that the French troops were under the strictest discipline; and
acted

acting under the orders of General Washington, would live with the Americans as their brethren.

A scheme was soon after formed, of making a combined attack with English ships and troops, under the command of Sir Henry Clinton and Admiral Arbuthnot, against the French fleet and troops at Rhode-Island. Accordingly a considerable part of the troops at New-York were embarked for that purpose. General Washington having received information of this, passed the North River, by a very rapid movement, and, with an army increased to 12,000 men, proceeded with celerity towards King's Bridge, in order to attack New-York; but learning that the British general had changed his intentions, and disembarked his troops on the 31st of the month, General Washington re-crossed the river and returned to his former station. Sir Henry Clinton and the Admiral had agreed to relinquish their design of attacking the French and Americans at Rhode-Island as impracticable for the present.

An unsuccessful attempt was also made about this time in the Jerseys by General Knyphausen, with 7000 British troops under his command, to surprise the advanced posts of General Washington's army. They proceeded very rapidly towards Springfield, meeting little opposition till they came to the bridge there, which was very gallantly defended by 170 of the continental troops, for 15 minutes, against the British army: but they were at length obliged to give up so unequal a contest, with the loss of 37 men. After securing this pass, the British troops marched into the place and set fire to most of the houses. They

also committed some other depredations in the Jerseys ; but gained no laurels there, being obliged to return about the beginning of July without effecting any thing material.

But in South-Carolina the royal arms were attended with more success. Earl Cornwallis, who commanded the British troops there, obtained a signal victory over General Gates on the 16th of August. The action began at break of day, in a situation very advantageous for the British troops, but very unfavourable to the Americans. The latter were much more numerous, but the ground on which both armies stood was narrowed by swamps on the right and left, so that the Americans could not properly avail themselves of their superiour numbers. The attack was made by the British troops with great vigour, and in a few minutes the action was general along the whole line. It was at this time a dead calm with a little haziness in the air, which preventing the smoke from rising, occasioned so thick a darkness, that it was difficult to see the effect of a very heavy and well supported fire on both sides. The British troops either kept up a constant fire or made use of bayonets, as opportunities offered ; and after an obstinate resistance during three quarters of an hour, threw the Americans into total confusion, and forced them to give way on all quarters. The continental troops behaved remarkably well, but the militia were soon broken and left the former to oppose the whole force of the British troops. General Gates did all in his power to rally the militia, but without effect the continentals retreated in some order ; but the rout of the militia was so great, that the British
cavalr

cavalry are said to have continued the pursuit of them to the distance of 22 miles from the place where the action happened. The loss of the Americans was very considerable; about 1000 prisoners were taken, and more are said to have been killed and wounded, but the number is not very accurately ascertained. Seven pieces of brass cannon, a number of colours, and all the ammunition-waggons of the Americans, were taken. Of the British troops, the killed and wounded amounted to 213. Among the prisoners taken was Major-general Baron de Kalb, a Prussian officer in the American service, who was mortally wounded, having exhibited great gallantry in the course of the action, and received 11 wounds. The British troops by which this victory was achieved, did not much exceed 2000, while the American army is said to have amounted to 6000; of which, however, the greatest part was militia.

Lieutenant-colonel Tarleton, who had greatly distinguished himself in this action, was detached the following day, with some cavalry and light infantry, amounting to about 350 men, to attack a corps of Americans under General Sumpter. He executed this service with great activity and military address. He procured good information of Sumpter's movements; and by forced and concealed marches came up with and surprised him in the middle of the day on the 18th near the Catawba fords. He totally destroyed or dispersed his detachment, which consisted of 700 men, killing 150 on the spot, and taking two pieces of brass cannon, 300 prisoners, and 44 wagons.

Not long after these events, means were found to detach Major-general Arnold, who had en-

gaged so ardently in the cause of America, and who had exhibited so much bravery in support of it, from the interests of the congress. Major Andre, adjutant-general to the British army, was a principal agent in this transaction; or, if the overture of joining the king's troops came first from Arnold, this gentleman was the person employed to concert the affair with him. More must have been originally comprehended in the scheme than the mere desertion of the American cause by Arnold: The surrender of West-Point into the hands of the royal army was the probable object; but whatever designs had been formed for promoting the views of the British government, they were frustrated by the apprehending of Major Andre. He was taken in disguise, after having assumed a false name, on the 23d of September, by three American soldiers, to whom he offered considerable rewards if they would have suffered him to escape, but without effect. Several papers written by Arnold were found upon him; and when Arnold had learned that Major Andre was seized, he found means to get on board a barge, and to escape to one of the king's ships. General Washington referred the case of Major Andre to the examination and decision of a board of general officers, consisting of Major-gen. Green, Major-general Lord Sterling, Major-general the Marquis de la Fayette, Major-general the Baron de Steuben, two other Major-generals, and eight brigadier-generals. Major Andre was examined before them, and the particulars of his case enquired into; and they reported to the American commander in chief, that Mr Andre came on shore from the Vulture sloop of war in the night, o

an interview with General Arnold, in a private and secret manner; that he changed his dress within the American lines; and, under a feigned name, and in a disguised habit, passed the American works at Stoney and Verplank's points, on the evening of the 22d of September; that he was taken on the morning of the 23d at Tarrytown, he being then on his way for New-York: and that, when taken, he had in his possession several papers which contained intelligence for the enemy. They therefore determined, that he ought to be considered as a spy from the enemy; and that, agreeable to the law and usage of nations, he ought to suffer death. Sir Henry Clinton, Lieutenant-general Robertson, and the late American general Arnold, all wrote pressing letters to General Washington on the occasion, in order to prevent the decision of the board of general officers from being put in force: But their applications were ineffectual. Major Andre was hanged at Tappan, in the province of New-York, on the 2d of October. He met his fate with great firmness; but appeared somewhat hurt that he was not allowed a more military death, for which he had solicited. He was a gentleman of very amiable qualities, and had a taste for literature and the fine arts, and possessed many accomplishments. His death, therefore, was regretted even by his enemies; and the seeming severity of the determination concerning him was much exclaimed against in Great Britain. It was however generally acknowledged, by impartial persons, that there was nothing in the execution of this unfortunate gentleman but what was perfectly consonant to the rules of war.

Arnold

Arnold was made a brigadier-general in the king's service, and published an address to the inhabitants of America, dated from New-York, October 7, in which he endeavoured to justify his desertion of their cause. He said, when he first engaged in it, that he conceived the rights of his country to be in danger, and that duty and honour called him to her defence. A redress of grievances was his only aim and object; and therefore he acquiesced unwillingly in the declaration of independence, because he thought it precipitate. But what now induced him to desert their cause was the disgust he had conceived at the French alliance, and at the refusal of Congress to comply with the last terms offered by Great Britain, which he thought equal to all their expectations and to all their wishes.

The Americans, however, accounted for the conduct of Arnold in a different and in a more probable and satisfactory manner. They alleged that he had so involved himself in debts and difficulties by his extravagant manner of living in America, that he had rendered it very inconvenient for him to continue there: that after the evacuation of Philadelphia by the British troops, Arnold, being invested with the command in that city, had made the house of Mr Penn, which was the best in the city, his head quarters. This he had furnished in an elegant and expensive manner, and lived in a style far beyond his income. It was manifest, they said, that he could at first have no great aversion to the French alliance, because that when M. Gerard, minister plenipotentiary from the court of France, arrived at Philadelphia in July 1778, General Arnold early and earnestly

earnestly solicited that minister, with his suite, to take apartments and bed and board at his house, until a proper house could be provided by the order of the congress. This offer M. Gerard accepted, and continued with him some weeks. The French minister resided upwards of 14 months in Philadelphia; during which time General Arnold kept up the most friendly and intimate acquaintance with him, and there was a continued interchange of dinners, balls, routes, and concerts: so that M. Gerard must have believed, that in General Arnold he had found and left one of the warmest friends the court of France had in America. He was also one of the first in congratulating the Chevalier de la Luzerne, the second French minister. About this time also, complaints and accusations were exhibited against him by the government of Philadelphia for divers mal-practices; among which charges were, the appropriation of goods and merchandise to his own use, which he had seized as British property in Philadelphia in July 1778. It was determined by a court-martial that his conduct was highly reprehensible; but he was indulgently treated, and was therefore only reprimanded by the commander in chief General Washington. It was in these circumstances, the Americans said, bankrupted in reputation, and fortune, loaded with debts, and having a growing and expensive family, that General Arnold first turned his thoughts toward joining the royal arms.

After the defeat of General Gates by Earl Cornwallis, that nobleman exerted himself to the utmost in extending the progress of the British arms

arms and with considerable effect. But one enterprise, which was conducted by Major Ferguson, proved unsuccessful. That officer had taken abundant pains to discipline some of the Tory militia, as they were termed; and with a party of these, and some British troops, amounting in the whole to about 1400 men, made incursions into the country. But on the 7th of October, he was attacked by a superior body of Americans, at a place called King's-mountain, and totally defeated. One hundred and fifty were killed in the action; and 810 made prisoners, of which 150 were wounded. Fifteen hundred stands of arms also fell into the hands of the Americans, whose loss was inconsiderable. But the following month Lieutenant-Colonel Tarleton, with a party of 170, chiefly cavalry, attacked General Sumpter, who is said to have had 1000 men, at a place called Black stocks, and obliged him to retire. Sumpter was wounded, and about 120 of the Americans killed, wounded, or taken. Of the British troops about 50 were killed or wounded.

On the 3d of September, the Mercury, a congress packet, was taken by the Vestal, Captain Keppel, near Newfoundland. On board this packet was Mr Laurens, late president of the congress, who was bound on an embassy to Holland. He had thrown his papers overboard, but great part of them were recovered without having received much damage. He was brought to London, and examined before the privy-council; in consequence of which he was committed close prisoner to the Tower, on the 6th of October, on a charge of high treason. His papers were delivered to the ministry, and contributed to facilitate

facilitate a rupture with Holland, as among them was found the sketch of a treaty of amity and commerce between the Republic of Holland and the United States of America.

CH A P. IX.

Revolt of the Pennsylvania Line—Tarleton defeated—Battle at Guildford—Battle at Eutaw—Action between the French and British Fleets off the Chesapeake—Capture of Cornwallis.

AT the beginning of the year 1781, an affair happened in America, from which expectations were found by Sr Henry Clinton, that some considerable advantage might be derived to the royal cause. The long continuance of the war, and the difficulties under which the congress laboured, had prevented their troops from being properly supplied with necessaries and conveniences. In consequence of this, on the first of January the American troops that were hutted at Morris-town, and who formed what was called the *Pennsylvania line*, turned out, being in number 1300, and declared, that they would serve no longer, unless their grievances were redressed, as they had not received their pay or been furnished with the necessary clothing or provisions. It is said that they were somewhat inflamed with liquor, in consequence of rum having been distributed to them more liberally than usual, new-year's day being considered as a kind of
of

of festival. A riot ensued, in which an officer was killed, and four wounded; five or six of the insurgents were also wounded. They then collected the artillery, stores, provisions, and waggons, and marched out of the camp. They passed by the quarters of General Wayne, who sent a message to them, requesting them to desist, or the consequences would prove fatal. They refused, and proceeded on their march till the evening, when they took post on an advantageous piece of ground, and elected officers from among themselves. On the second day they marched to Middlebrook, and on the third to Princeton, where they fixed their quarters. On that day a flag of truce was sent to them from the officers of the American camp, with a message, desiring to know what were their intentions. Some of them answered, that they had already served longer than the time for which they were enlisted, and would serve no longer; and others, that they would not return, unless their grievances were redressed. But at the same time they repeatedly, and in the strongest terms, denied being influenced by the least disaffection to the American cause, or having any intentions of deserting to the enemy.

Intelligence of this transaction was soon conveyed to New-York. A large body of British troops were immediately ordered to hold themselves in readiness to move on the shortest notice it being hoped that the American revolvers might be induced to join the royal army. Messengers were also sent to them from General Clinton, acquainting them that they should directly be taken under the protection of the British government

that they should have a free pardon for all former offences; and that the pay due to them from the congress should be faithfully paid them without any expectation of military service, unless it should be voluntary, upon condition of their laying down their arms, and returning to their allegiance. It was also recommended to them to move beyond the South River; and they were assured, that a body of British troops should be ready to protect them whenever they desired it. These propositions were rejected with disdain; and they even delivered up two of Sir Henry Clinton's messengers to the congress. Joseph Reid, Esq; president of the state of Pennsylvania, afterwards repaired to them at Princeton, and an accommodation took place: such of them as had served out their full terms were permitted to return to their own homes, and others again joined the American army, upon receiving satisfactory assurances that their grievances should be redressed.

On the 11th of January Lord Cornwallis advanced towards North Carolina. He wished to drive Gen. Morgan from his station, and to deter the inhabitants from joining him. The execution of this business was intrusted to Lieut. Col. Tarleton; who was detached with the light and legion infantry, the fusiliers, the first battalion of the 71st regiment, about 350 cavalry, two field pieces, and an adequate proportion of men from the royal artillery, upwards of 1100 in the whole. This detachment, after a progress of some days, by fatiguing marches, at about ten o'clock on the evening of the 16th of January, reached the ground which Morgan had quitted

but a few hours before. The pursuit recommenced by two o'clock the next morning, and was rapidly continued through marshes and broken grounds till day light, when the Americans were discovered in front. Two of their videttes were taken soon after, who gave information that Morgan had halted and prepared for action, at a place called the Cowpens, near Pacolet river. The British, beside their field pieces, had the superiority in infantry, in the proportion of five to four, and in cavalry of more than three to one. Beside, nearly two thirds of the troops under Morgan were militia. Morgan had obtained early intelligence of Tarleton's force and advances; and had drawn up his men in two lines. The whole of the North and South Carolina militia present was put under the command of Col. Pickens, and from the first line; which was advanced a few hundred yards before the second, with orders to form on the right of the second when forced to retire. The second line consisted of the light infantry under Lieut. Col. Howard, and the Virginia riflemen. Lieut. Col. Washington, with his cavalry, and about forty-five militia-men, mounted and equipped with swords, under Lieut. Col. McCall, were drawn up at some distance in the rear of the whole. The open wood in which they were formed was neither secured in front, flank, or rear. Without the delay of a single moment, and in despite of extreme fatigue, the light legion infantry and fusileers were ordered to form in line. Before the order was executed, and while Major Newmarsh, who commanded the latter corps, was posting his officers, the line, though far from complete

complete, was led to the attack by Tarleton himself. The British advanced with a shout, and poured in an incessant fire of musquetry. Col. Pickens directed the militia not to fire till the British were within forty or fifty yards. This order, though executed with great firmness and success, was not sufficient to repel the enemy. The American militia gave way on all quarters. The British advanced rapidly, and engaged the second line. The Continentals, after an obstinate conflict, were compelled to retreat to the cavalry. Col. Ogilvie, with his troop of forty men, had been ordered to charge the right flank of the Americans, and was engaged in cutting down the militia; but being exposed to a heavy fire, and charged at the same time by Washington's dragoons, was forced to retreat in confusion. A great number of the British infantry officers had already fallen, and nearly a proportionable number of privates. The remainder being too few and too much fatigued, could not improve the advantage gained over the Continentals; and Tarleton's legion cavalry standing aloof instead of advancing, Lieut. Col. Howard seized the favourable opportunity, rallied the Continentals, and charged with fixed bayonets, nearly at the same moment when Washington made his successful attack. The example was instantly followed by the militia. Nothing could exceed the astonishment of the British, occasioned by these unexpected charges. Their advance fell back, and communicated a panic to others, which soon became general. Two hundred and fifty horse which had not been engaged, fled through the woods with the utmost precipitation, bearing down such

officers as opposed their flight, and the cannon were soon seized by the Americans, the detachment from the train being either killed or wounded in their defence. The greatest confusion now followed among the infantry. In the moment of it Lieut. Col. Howard called to them to lay down their arms, and promised them good quarters. Some hundreds accepted the offer, and surrendered. The first battalion of the 71st regiment, and two British light infantry companies laid down their arms to the American militia. The only body of infantry that escaped, was a detachment left at some distance to guard the baggage. Early intelligence of their defeat was conveyed to the officer commanding that corps by some royalists. What part of the baggage could not be carried off he immediately destroyed; and with his men mounted on the waggon and spare horses, he retreated to Lord Cornwallis. The British had 10 commissioned officers, and upwards of 100 rank and file killed. Two hundred wounded, 29 commissioned officers, and above 500 privates prisoners, fell into the hands of the Americans, besides two pieces of artillery (first taken from the British at Saratoga, then retaken by them at Camden, and now recovered by the Americans) two standards, 800 muzzles, 35 baggage waggons, and upwards of 100 dragoon horses. Washington pursued Tarleton's cavalry for several miles; but the far greater part of them escaped. They joined their army in two separate divisions. One arrived in the neighbourhood of the British encampment upon the evening of the same day; the other under Tarleton appeared the next morning. Although

though Tarleton's troops had waged a most cruel warfare, and their progress had been marked with burnings and devastations, not a man of them was killed, wounded, or even insulted after he had surrendered. The Americans had only twelve men killed and sixty wounded.

This defeat of the troops under Tarleton, while it re-animated the desponding friends of America, and brightened their hopes, was a severe stroke to Lord Cornwallis, as the loss of his light infantry was a great disadvantage to him. The day after the event he employed in collecting the remains of Tarleton's corps, and in endeavouring to form a junction with General Leslie, who had been ordered to march towards him with a body of British troops from Wynnesborough. Considerable exertions were then made by part of the army, without baggage, to retake the prisoners in the hands of the Americans, and to intercept General Morgan's corps on its retreat to the Catawba. But that American officer, after his defeat of Tarleton, had made forced marches up into the country, and crossed the Catawba the evening before a great rain, which swelled the river to such a degree, as to prevent the royal army from crossing for several days; during which time the British prisoners were got over the Yadkin; whence they proceeded to Dan River, which they also passed, and on the 14th of February had reached Court-house in the province of Virginia.

Lord Cornwallis employed a halt of two days in collecting some flour, and in destroying superfluous baggage and all his waggons, excepting those laden with hospital stores, salt, and ammunition, and four reserved empty in readiness for

sick or wounded. Being thus freed from all unnecessary incumbrance, he marched through North-Carolina with great rapidity, and penetrated to the remotest extremities of that province on the banks of the Dan. His progress was sometimes impeded by parties of the militia, and some skirmishes ensued, but he met with no very considerable opposition. On the first of February the king's troops crossed the Catawba at M'Cowan's Ford, where General Davidson, with a party of American militia, was posted, in order to oppose their passage; but he falling by the first discharge, the royal troops made good their landing, and the militia retreated. When Lord Cornwallis arrived at Hillsborough, he erected the king's standard, and invited, by proclamation, all loyal subjects to repair to it, and to stand forth and take an active part in assisting his Lordship to restore order and government. He had been taught to believe that the king's friends were numerous in that part of the country: but the event did not confirm the truth of the representations that had been given. The royalists were but few in number, and some of them too timid to join the king's standard. There were, indeed, about 200 who were proceeding to Hillsborough under colonel Pyle, in order to avow their attachment to the royal cause; but they were met accidentally and surrounded by a detachment from the American army, by whom most of them were cut in pieces. Meanwhile General Green was marching with great expedition with the troops under his command, in order to form a junction with the other corps of American troops, that he might thereby be enabled to put some effectual stop to the progress of Lord Cornwallis.

In other places some considerable advantages were obtained by the royal arms. On the 4th of January, some ships of war with a number of transports, on board which was a large body of troops under the command of Brigadier-general Arnold, arrived at Westover, about 140 miles from the Capes of Virginia, where the troops immediately landed and marched to Richmond; which they reached without opposition, the militia that was collected having retreated on their approach. Lieutenant-colonel Simcoe marched from hence with a detachment of the British troops to Westham, where they destroyed one of the finest founderies for cannon in America, and a large quantity of stores and cannon. General Arnold, on his arrival at Richmond, found there large quantities of salt, rum, sail-cloth, and tobacco, the last of which he destroyed to a very great amount. The British troops afterwards attacked and dispersed some small parties of the Americans, took some stores and a few pieces of cannon, and on the 20th of the same month marched into Portsmouth. On the 25th, Captain Barclay, with several ships of war, and a body of troops under the command of Major Craig, arrived in Cape-Fear River. The troops landed about nine miles from Wilmington, and on the 28th entered that town. It was understood that their having possession of that town, and being masters of Cape-Fear River, would be productive of very beneficial effects to Lord Cornwallis's army.

General Green having effected a junction about the 10th of March with a continental regiment of what were called *eighteen months men*, and two
large

large bodies of militia belonging to Virginia and North-Carolina, formed a resolution to attack the British troops under the command of Lord Cornwallis. The American army marched from the High Rock Ford on the 12th of the month, and on the 14th arrived at Guildford. Lord Cornwallis, from the information he had received of the motions of the American general, concluded what were his designs. As they approached more nearly to each other, a few skirmishes ensued between some advanced parties, in which the advantage was sometimes gained by the Americans and sometimes by the British. On the morning of the 15th, Lord Cornwallis marched with his troops at day-break in order to meet the Americans or to attack them in their encampment. About four miles from Guildford, the advanced guard of the British army, commanded by Lieutenant-colonel Tarleton, fell in with a corps of the Americans, consisting of Lieutenant-colonel Lee's legion, some Back-Mountain men and Virginian militia, with whom he had a severe skirmish, and was, at length, obliged to retreat.

The greater part of the country in which the action happened is a wilderness, with a few cleared fields interspersed. The American army was posted on a rising ground about a mile and a half from Guildford court house. It was drawn up in three lines; the front line was composed of the North-Carolina militia, under the command of the generals Butler and Eaton; the second line, of Virginian militia, commanded by the generals Stephens and Lawson, forming two brigades; the third line, consisting of two brigades,

one

one of Virginia and one of Maryland continental troops, commanded by General Huger and Colonel Williams. Lieutenant-Colonel Washington, with the dragoons of the first and third regiments, a detachment of light infantry composed of continental troops, and a regiment of riflemen under Colonel Lynch, formed a corps of observation for the security of their right flank. Lieutenant-colonel Lee, with his legion, a detachment of light infantry, and a corps of riflemen under Colonel Campbell, formed a corps of observation for the security of their left flank. The attack of the American army was directed to be made by Lord Cornwallis in the following order: On the right, the regiment of Bose and the 71st regiment, led by Major-general Leslie, and supported by the first battalion of guards; on the left, the 23d and 33d regiments, led by Lieutenant-colonel Webster, and supported by the grenadiers and second battalion of guards commanded by Brigadier-general O'Hara; the Yagers and light infantry of the guards remained in a wood on the left of the guns, and the cavalry in the road, ready to act as circumstances might require.

About half an hour after one in the afternoon, the action commenced by a cannonade which lasted about twenty minutes; when the British troops advanced in 3 columns and attacked the North-Carolina brigades with great vigour, and soon obliged part of these troops to quit the field: but the Virginia militia gave them a warm reception, and kept up a heavy fire for a long time, till, being beaten back, the action became general almost every where. The American corps under the Lieut-

tenant

tenant-colonels Washington and Lee were also warmly engaged, and did considerable execution. Lieutenant-colonel Tarleton had directions to keep his cavalry compact, and not to charge without positive orders, except to protect any of the corps from the most evident danger of being defeated. The excessive thickness of the woods rendered the British bayonets of little use, and enabled the broken corps of Americans to make frequent stands with an irregular fire. The second battalion of guards first gained the clear ground near Guildford court-house, and found a corps of continental infantry, superior in number, formed in an open field on the left of the road. Desirous of signaling themselves, they immediately attacked and soon defeated them, taking two six pounders: but as they pursued the Americans into the wood with too much ardour, they were thrown into confusion by a heavy fire, and instantly charged and driven back into the field by Lieutenant-colonel Washington's dragoons. with the loss of the two six pounders they had taken. But the American cavalry were afterwards repulsed and the two six pounders again fell into the hands of the British troops. The British troops having at length broken the second Maryland regiment, and turned the left flank of the Americans, got into the rear of the Virginia brigade, and appeared to be gaining their right, which would have encircled the whole of the continental troops, when Gen. Greene thought it prudent to order a retreat. Many of the American militia dispersed in the woods; but the continental troops retreated in good order to Ruddy-Fork River, and crossed at the ford about three miles

miles from the field of action and there halted. When they had collected their stragglers, they retreated to the iron-works, ten miles distant from Guildford, where they encamped. They lost their artillery and two waggons laden with ammunition. It was a hard fought action, and lasted an hour and a half. Of the British troops, the loss, as stated by Lord Cornwallis, was 532 killed, wounded, and missing. General Greene in his account of the action transmitted to Congress, stated the loss of the continental troops to amount to 329 killed, wounded, and missing; but he made no estimate of the loss of the militia, which was somewhat more than 100. Lieutenant-colonel Stuart was killed in the action; and Lieutenant-colonel Webster, and the captains Schuts, Maynard, and Goodriche, died of the wounds they had received in it. Brigadier-general O'Hara, Brigadier-general Howard, and Lieutenant-colonel Tarleton, were also wounded. Of the Americans the principal officer killed was Major Anderson of Maryland line, and the generals Stephens and Huger were wounded.

The British troops underwent great hardships in the course of this campaign; and in a letter of Lord Cornwallis's to Lord George Germain, dated March 17th, he observed, that "the soldiers had been two days without bread." His lordship quitted Guildford three days after the battle which was fought in that place; and on the 7th of April, after a retreat marked with proofs of great alarm and precipitation, arrived in the neighbourhood of Wilmington. Soon after General Green, notwithstanding his late defeat, endeavoured to make some vigorous attempts against
the

the king's forces in South-Carolina. Lord Rawdon had been appointed to defend the post of Camden, with about 800 British and provincials; and on the 19th of April General Green appeared before that place with a large body of continentals and militia. He found it, however, impossible to attempt to storm the town with any prospect of success; and therefore endeavoured to take such a position as should induce the British troops to sally from their works. He posted the Americans about a mile from the town, on an eminence which was covered with woods, and flanked on the left by an impassable swamp. But on the morning of the 25th, Lord Rawdon marched out of Camden, and attacked General Green in his camp. The Americans made a vigorous resistance, but were at length compelled to give way; and the pursuit is said to have been continued three miles. For some time after the action commenced, General Green entertained great hopes of defeating the British troops; in which, as the Americans were superior in point of numbers, he would probably have succeeded, had not some capital military errors been committed by one or two of the officers who served under him. On the American side Colonel Washington had behaved extremely well in this action, having made upwards of 200 of the English prisoners, with 10 or 12 officers, before he perceived that the Americans were abandoning the field of battle. The loss of the English was about 100 killed and wounded. Upwards of 100 of the Americans were taken prisoners; and according to the account published by General Greene, they had 126 killed and wounded. After

this action Greene retreated to Rugeley's mills, 12 miles from Camden, in order to collect his troops and wait for reinforcements.

Notwithstanding the advantage which Lord Rawdon had obtained over General Greene at Camden, that nobleman soon after found it necessary, having burned the goal, mills, many private houses, and a part of his own baggage, to quit that post; and the Americans made themselves masters of several other posts that were occupied by the king's troops, and the garrisons of which were obliged to surrender themselves prisoners of war. These troops were afterwards exchanged under a cartel which took place between Lord Cornwallis and General Greene for the release of all prisoners of war in the southern district. After these events, General Greene laid close siege to Ninety-six, which was considered as the most commanding and important of all the posts in the back country; and on the 19th of June he attempted to storm the garrison, but was repulsed by the gallantry of the British troops, with the loss of about 150 killed, wounded, and missing. General Greene then raised the siege, and retired with his army behind the Saluda, to a strong situation, within 16 miles of Ninety-six.

On the 18th of April a large body of British troops, under the command of Major-general Philips and Brigadier-general Arnold, embarked at Portsmouth in Virginia, in order to proceed on an expedition for the purpose of destroying some of the American stores. A party of light-infantry were sent 10 or 12 miles up the Chickahomany; where they destroyed several armed ships, sundry

ware-houses, and the American state ship-yard. At Petersburg, the English destroyed 4000 hogheads of tobacco, one ship, and a number of small vessels on the stocks and in the river. At Chesterfield court-house, they burnt a range of barracks for 2000 men and 300 barrels of flour. At a place called *Osborn's*, they made themselves masters of several vessels loaded with cordage and flour, and destroyed about 2000 hogheads of tobacco, and sundry vessels were sunk and burnt. At Warwick, they burnt a magazine of 500 barrels of flour, some fine mills belonging to Colonel Carey, a large range of public rope-walks and store-houses, tan and bark houses full of hides and bark, and great quantities of tobacco. A like destruction of stores and goods was made in other parts of Virginia.

From the account already given of some of the principal military operations of the present year in America, it appears, that though advantage had been gained by the royal troops, yet no event had taken place from which it could rationally be expected that the final termination of the war would be favourable to Great-Britain. It was also a disadvantageous circumstance, that there was a misunderstanding between Admiral Arbuthnot and Sir Henry Clinton, and a mutual disapprobation of each other's conduct. It was manifest from their dispatches to government, and especially from those of General Clinton, whose expressions respecting the conduct of the admiral were by no means equivocal.

On the 16th of March 1781, a partial action happened off the Capes of Virginia, between a fleet under Admiral Arbuthnot, consisting

seven ships of the line and one fifty-gun ship, and a French squadron consisting of the same number of ships of the line, and one forty-gun ship. Some of the ships in both fleets received considerable damage in the action, and the loss of the English was 30 killed and 73 wounded; but no ship was taken on either side. The British fleet, however, claimed the advantage; as the French were obliged to retire, and were supposed to be prevented by this action from carrying troops upon the Chesapeake, in order to attack General Arnold and impede the progress of Lord Cornwallis. But it was thought an unfortunate circumstance, that some time before this engagement the *Romulus*, a ship of 44 guns, was captured by the French off the Capes of Virginia.

Lord Cornwallis, after his victory over General Greene at Guilford, proceeded, as we have seen, to Wilmington, where he arrived on the 7th of April. But before he reached that place, he published a proclamation, calling upon all loyal subjects to stand forth and take an active part in restoring good order and government; and declaring to all persons who had engaged in the present rebellion against his majesty's authority, but who were now convinced of their error, and desirous of returning to their duty and allegiance, that if they would surrender themselves with their arms and ammunition at head-quarters, or to the officer commanding in the districts contiguous to their respective places of residence, and before the 20th of that month, they should be permitted to return to their respective homes upon giving a military parole; they would be protected, in their persons and properties, from all sorts of violence from the British troops; and

would be restored as soon as possible, to all the privileges of legal and constitutional government. But it does not appear that any considerable number of the Americans were allured by these promises to give any evidences of their attachment to the royal cause.

On the 20th of May, his Lordship arrived at Petersburg in Virginia, where he joined a body of British troops that had been under the command of Major-general Philips; but the command of which, in consequence of the death of that officer, had devolved upon Brigadier-general Arnold. Before this junction he had encountered considerable inconveniencies from the difficulty in procuring provisions and forage; so that in a letter to Sir Henry Clinton, he informed him, that his cavalry wanted every thing, and his infantry every thing but shoes. He added, that he had experienced the distresses of marching hundreds of miles in a country chiefly hostile, without one active or useful friend, without intelligence, and without communication with any part of the country.

On the 26th of June, about six miles from Williamsburg, Lieutenant-colonel Simcoe, and 350 of the queen's rangers, with 80 mounted yagers, were attacked by a much superior body of the Americans; but whom they repulsed with great gallantry and with equal success, making four officers and twenty private men prisoners. The loss of the Americans in this action is said to have been upwards of 120, and that of the British troops not more than 40.

On the 6th of July an action happened near the Green Springs in Virginia, between a reconnoitring party of the Americans under General Wayne

Wayne, amounting to about 800, and a large part of the British army under Lord Cornwallis; in which the Americans had 127 killed and wounded, and the loss of the royal troops is supposed to have been considerably greater. It was an action in which no small degree of military skill and courage was exhibited by the Americans. In a variety of skirmishes, the Marquis de la Fayette very much distinguished himself, and displayed the utmost ardour in the American cause.

In South-Carolina, an action happened on the 9th of September near the Eutaw Springs, between a large body of British troops under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Stuart and an equal body of Americans, under the command of General Green. It was an obstinate engagement, and lasted near two hours. The British, with a considerable loss, were in the first part of the battle routed in all quarters, but some having taken post in a piquetted garden, and others thrown themselves into a brick house, the eagerness of the American pursuit was considerably checked, and gave Colonel Stuart an opportunity on the evening of the next day, to abandon the Eutaw, and march towards Charleston, taking a number of his wounded, and about one thousand stand of arms.

In the course of the same month, General Arnold was sent on an expedition against New-London, in Connecticut, where he destroyed a great part of the shipping, and an immense quantity of naval stores, European manufactures, and East and West India commodities. The town itself was also burnt, which is said, but untruly, to

have been unavoidable, on account of the explosions of great quantities of gun-powder which happened to be in the store-houses that were set on fire. A fort, of which it was thought necessary to gain possession in this expedition, was not taken without considerable loss. This was Fort-Grifwold; which was defended by the Americans with great gallantry, and the assault was made by the English with equal bravery. The British troops entered the works with fixed bayonets, and were opposed with great vigour by the garrison with long spears. After a most obstinate defence of near forty minutes, the assailants gained possession of the fort, in which 85 Americans were found dead, and 60 wounded, most of them mortally; but of the killed, it is painful to observe, that the greater number fell after the British entered the fort, and when resistance had ceased. Of the British troops Major Montgomery was killed by a spear in entering the American works; and 192 men were also killed and wounded in this expedition.

Notwithstanding the advantage that Lord Cornwallis had obtained over the Americans, his situation in Virginia began by degrees to be very critical; and the rather because he did not receive those reinforcements and supplies from Sir Henry Clinton, of which he had formed expectations, and which he conceived to be necessary to the success of his operations. Indeed, the commander in chief was prevented from sending those reinforcements to Lord Cornwallis which he otherwise might have done, by his fears respecting New-York, against which he entertained great apprehensions that General Washington intended

intended to make a very formidable attack. In fact, that able American general had this object in view ; and while the attack was in serious contemplation, a letter from him detailing the particulars of the intended operations of the campaign, being intercepted, fell into the hands of Sir Henry Clinton. After the plan was changed, the royal commander was so much under the impression of the intelligence contained in the intercepted letter, that he believed every movement towards Virginia to be a feint, calculated to draw off his attention from the defence of New-York. Under the influence of this opinion he bent his whole force to strengthen that post, and suffered the French and American armies to pass without any molestation. When the first opportunity of striking at them was elapsed, then for the first time he was brought to believe that the allies had fixed on Virginia, for the theatre of their combined operations. As truth may be made to answer the purposes of deception, so no feint of attacking New-York, could have been more successful than the real intention. At the same time Gen. Washington, by a variety of judicious military manœuvres, in which he completely out-generalled the British commander, increased his apprehensions about New-York, and prevented him from sending proper assistance to Lord Cornwallis. Having for a considerable time kept Sir Henry Clinton in perpetual alarm in New-York, though with an army much inferior to the garrison of that city, General Washington suddenly quitted his camp at White-Plains, crossed the Delaware, and marched towards Virginia, apparently with a design to attack Lord Cornwallis.

wallis. Sir Henry Clinton then received information, that the Count de Grasse, with a large French fleet, was expected every moment in the Chesapeake, in order to co-operate with General Washington. In the mean time, Lord Cornwallis had taken possession of the posts of York-Town and Gloucester in Virginia. He applied himself with the utmost diligence to fortify these posts, and to render them equally respectable by land and water. His whole force amounted to about 7000 excellent troops. Before his lordship had fixed himself and army in these posts, a series of manœuvres had taken place between him and the Marquis de la Fayette; in which the British general displayed the boldness of enterprise, and the marquis the judgment of age, blended with the ardor of youth. Fayette, under various pretences, sent the Pennsylvania troops to the south side of James River; collected a force in Gloucester county; and made sundry excellent arrangements, which he early communicated to Count de Grasse by an officer.

The French and American armies continued their march from the northward, till they arrived at the Head of Elk: within an hour after they received an express from Count de Grasse, with the joyful account of his arrival and situation. This circumstance will appear the more remarkable, when we consider the original distance of the parties, as well from the scene of action as from each other, and the various accidents, difficulties, and delays, to which they were all liable. The greatest harmony subsisted between Washington and Rochambeau, which lessened some of the difficulties attending their
joint

joint operations. The former being without a sufficiency of money to supply his troops, applied to the count for a loan, which was instantly granted. In order to hasten the arrival of the allied troops, de Grasse selected seven vessels, drawing the least water, to transport them down the Chesapeak Bay. But the moment they were ready to sail on this service, the count was obliged to prepare for repelling the British fleet. When Mr de Barras arrived, he sent up those transports he brought with him for the troops: de Grasse after that added to them as many frigates as he could. By the 25th of September all the troops were arrived and landed at Williamsburg, and preparations were made with all possible dispatch for putting the army in a situation to move down towards York-Town. General Washington and Count de Rochambeau, with their suites and other officers, had reached Williamsburg by hard travelling, on the 14th, eleven days sooner. Here the general found a vessel ready to convey him to the capes of Virginia, sent by Count de Grasse, as he could not with propriety leave his fleet. The commander in chief and the Count de Rochambeau, accompanied by Generals Chastellux, Du Portail, and Knox, immediately proceeded to visit the count on board the *Ville de Paris*. A council was held, and the count de Grasse detailed his engagements to be in the West-Indies at the latter end of October or beginning of November. But he finally agreed to continue in the Chesapeak until the operation against Lord Cornwallis should be decided. After which the company returned.

All

All the American and French troops formed a junction at Williamsburg. The Marquis de la Fayette had been joined by 3000 under St Simon some days before the 25th of September. The whole regular force thus collected amounted to between 11 and 12,000 men. The militia of Virginia were also called out to service, and were commanded by Gov. Nelson. On the 27th Gen. Washington gave out in general orders—
“If the enemy should be tempted to meet the army on its march, the general particularly enjoins the troops to place their principal reliance on the bayonet, that they may prove the *vanity of the boast which the British make of their peculiar prowess in deciding battles with that weapon.*” The next morning the army marched, and halted about two miles from York-Town just before sun-set. The officers and foldiers were ordered to lie on their arms the whole night. On the 30th, Col. Scammel (being officer of the day) in approaching the enemy’s outer works, to see if they had really left them, was mortally wounded and taken prisoner by a party of the enemy’s horse, which lay secreted. This day Lord Cornwallis was closely invested in York-Town. The French extended from the river above the town to a morass in the centre, where they were met by the Americans, who occupied the opposite side from the river to that spot. The post at Gloucester Point was, at the same time, invested by the Duke de Lauzun with his legion, and a number of Virginia militia under Gen. Weedon.

Before the troops left Williamsburgh, Gen. Washington received a letter from the Count de Grati,

Grasse, informing him, that in case of the appearance of a British fleet, the count conceived it to be his duty to go out and meet them at sea, instead of fighting in a confined situation. This information exceedingly alarmed the general, who instantly saw the probability of the British fleet's manœuvring in such a manner, as to reinforce or withdraw Lord Cornwallis. To prevent a measure pregnant with so much evil, his excellency wrote to the count on the 26th: "I am unable to describe the painful anxiety under which I have laboured since the reception of your letter of the 23d instant. It obliges me warmly to urge a perseverance in the plan agreed upon. The attempt upon York, under the protection of your shipping is as certain of success as a superior force and a superiority of measures can render any military operation. The capture of the British army is a matter so important in itself and in its consequences, that it must greatly tend to put an end to the war.—If your excellency quits the Bay, an access is open to relieve York, of which the enemy will instantly avail themselves. The consequence of this will be, not only the disgrace, but the probable disbanding of the whole army; for the present seat of war being such, as absolutely precludes the use of waggons, from the great number of large rivers which intersect the country, there will be a total want of provisions. This province has been so exhausted, that subsistence must be drawn from a distance, and that can only be done by a superior fleet in the Bay. I earnestly beg your excellency to consider, that if by moving your fleet from the situation agreed upon, we lose the present opportunity, we shall never

never hereafter have it in our power to strike so decisive a stroke, and the period of an honourable peace will be further distant than ever. Supposing the force, said to have arrived under Adm. Digby, to be true, their whole force united cannot be such as to give them any hopes of success in the attacking your fleet. I am to press your excellency to persevere in the scheme so happily concerted between us. Permit me to add, that the absence of your fleet from the Bay may frustrate our design upon the garrison at York. For, in the present situation, Lord Cornwallis might evacuate the place with the loss of his artillery, baggage, and a few men — sacrifices, which would be highly justifiable, from the desire of saving the body of the army.—The Marquis de la Fayette carries this. He is not to pass the Cape for fear of accident, in case you should be at sea.” This letter with the Marquis’s persuasions, had the desired effect; and the same hour when the combined army appeared before York-Town, the French fleet was brought to the mouth of the river, and by their position effectually covered all subsequent military operations, and prevented either the retreat or succour of Lord Cornwallis’s army by water. The posts of York and Gloucester were the most favourable of any in the country for besieging the British, and preventing their escape, when the siege was supported by a superior land and naval force.

Lord Cornwallis was sufficiently strong for fighting the Marquis de la Fayette, even after he had been joined by St Simon; and he is thought to have been mistaken in not engaging them either separately or together. The moment he heard

that the allied troops were at the Head of Elk, and that de Grasse was arrived with so powerful a fleet at the Chesapeake, his lordship should have pushed off for Charleston. Therefore it was that Gen. Greene wrote to Baron Steuben on the 17th, — "Nothing can save Cornwallis but a rapid retreat through North Carolina to Charleston." His lordship's conduct was influenced by an expectation of a reinforcement from Sir Henry Clinton, and a full persuasion that those exertions would be made at New-York, and such a naval strength would arrive from thence in time, as would effectually relieve him. This may be gathered from his writing on the 16th: "If I had no hopes of relief, I would rather risk an action than defend my half-finished works. But as you say, Adm. Digby is hourly expected, and have promised exertions to assist me, I do not think myself justifiable in putting the fate of the war upon so desperate an attempt." He must have meant that of fighting Fayette and St Simon, for the troops of Generals Washington and Rochambeau did not arrive till afterward. Fayette had taken a strong position: but the attempt would not have appeared so desperate to his lordship, had he known the real number of the enemy.

The trenches were opened by the combined armies on the 6th of October, at 600 yards distance from Cornwallis's works. The night being dark and rainy was well adapted to the service, in which there was not a man hurt. In the afternoon of the 9th, the redoubts and batteries being completed, a general discharge of 24 and 18 pounders and of 10 inch mortars commenced by the Americans on the right, and continued all

night without intermission. The next morning, the French opened their batteries on the left, and a tremendous roar of cannon and mortars was continued for six or eight hours without ceasing. There was an incessant fire through the succeeding night. By one of the French shells, the Charon of 44 guns and a transport ship were set on fire and burnt. The following morning, the enemy's other guardship was fired by one of the American shells and consumed. At night, the besiegers opened their second parallel, 200 yards from the works of the besieged. The Americans had 3 men killed and 1 wounded by a French cannon, which fired too low. On the 14th in the evening, an American battalion was ordered into the second parallel, and to begin a large battery in advance on the right. A few minutes before they began to break ground, the enemy kept a constant fire upon them, one of their shells burst in the centre of the battalion, and killed a captain and one private, and wounded a second. The fire of the besieged was very great through the night; and it was thought that the besiegers lost as many men within 24 hours at this period as they had done nearly the whole siege before.

The redoubts, which were advanced about 20 yards on the left of the British, greatly impeded the progress of the combined armies. An attack on these was therefore proposed.—To excite spirit of emulation the reduction of the one was committed to the French; of the other to the Americans. The light infantry of the latter were commanded by the Marquis de la Fayette; and the service was allotted to a select corps. The Marquis said to General Washington—“T

troops should retaliate on the British, for the cruelties they have practised." The general answered — "You have full command, and may order as you please." The marquis ordered the party to remember New London, and to retaliate, by putting the men in the redoubt to the sword after having carried it. The men marched to the assault with unloaded arms, at dark on the night of the 14th, passed the abatis, and palisades, and attacking on all sides carried the redoubt in a few minutes, with the loss of 8 killed and 28 wounded. Lieut. Col. Laurens personally took the commanding officer. The colonel's humanity and that of the Americans so effectually overcame their resentments, that they spared the British. When bringing them off as prisoners, they said among themselves — "Why! how is this? We were ordered to put them to death." Being asked by others why they had not done it, they answered, — "We could not, when they begged and cried so upon their knees for their lives." About five of the British were killed, and 1 major, 1 captain, and 1 ensign, and 20 privates captured. Col. Hamilton, who conducted the enterprise with much address and intrepidity, in his report to the marquis, mentioned, to the honour of his detachment — "that incapable of imitating examples of barbarity, and forgetting recent provocations, they spared every man that ceased to resist." The French were equally successful on their side. They carried the redoubt committed to them with rapidity, but lost a considerable number of men. These two works being taken into the second parallel facilitated the subsequent operations.

The British were so weakened by the fire of the combined armies, but chiefly by sickness, that lord Cornwallis could not venture any considerable number in the making of sallies. The present emergency however was such, that a little before day break of the morning of the 16th he ordered a sortie of about 400 men, under Lieut. Col. Abercromby to attack two batteries which seemed to be in the greatest forwardness, and to spike the guns. Two detachments were appointed to the service; and both attacks were made with such impetuosity, that the redoubts which covered the batteries, were forced, and eleven pieces of cannon spiked. The French troops who had the guard of that part of the entrenchment, suffered considerably. This successful action did honour to the officers and troops engaged, but produced no essential benefit. The cannon, being hastily spiked, were soon rendered again serviceable; and the combined forces were so industrious, that they finished their batteries, opened them about 4 o'clock in the afternoon, and fired briskly. Their several batteries were now covered with near 100 pieces of heavy ordnance; and the British works were so destroyed, that they could scarcely show a single gun.

Thus was lord Cornwallis reduced to the necessity of preparing for a surrender, or of attempting an escape. He determined upon the latter. Boats were prepared under different pretexts, for the reception of the troops by ten at night; in order to pass them over to Gloucester Point. The arrangements were made with the utmost secrecy. The intention was to abandon the baggage, and

to leave a detachment behind to capitulate for the town's people, and for the sick and wounded, His lordship had also prepared a letter on the subject, to be delivered to Gen. Washington after his departure. The first embarkation had arrived at Gloucester Point, and the greater part of the troops were already landed, when the weather, which was before moderate and calm, instantly changed to a most violent storm of wind and rain. The boats with the remaining troops were all driven down the river, and the design of passing was not only entirely frustrated, but the absence of the boats rendered it impossible to bring back the troops from Gloucester. Thus weakened and divided, the army was in the most imminent danger. The boats however returned: and the troops were brought back without much loss in the course of the forenoon.

Matters were now hastening to a crisis, which could not be longer averted. The British works were sinking under the weight of the American and French artillery. The continuance of the allied fire, only for a few more hours, would reduce them to such a condition that it would be rashness to attempt their defence.—The time for expecting relief from New York was elapsed. The strength and spirit of the royal troops were worn down by constant watching, and unremitting fatigue. Lord Cornwallis therefore sent out a flag at 10 o'clock in the morning of the 17th, with a letter to General Washington, requesting a cessation of arms for twenty-four hours, and that commissioners might be appointed for digesting the terms of capitulation. An answer was given; and a reply forwarded in the afternoon;

noon; to which Gen. Washington rejoined the next day, declaring the general basis on which the capitulation might take place. Commissioners were appointed—on the side of the allies, Viscount de Noailles and Lieut. Col. Laurens, whose father was in close confinement in the tower, while the son was drawing up articles by which an English nobleman and a British army became prisoners. While settling the terms, the Viscount wished his Lordship to state, upon his honour, the value of the military chest. His Lordship declared it to be about 1800*l.* sterling. The viscount observed that the sum was so trifling, that it was not worth bringing into the account, and therefore was for leaving it entirely at Cornwallis's disposal. Laurens interfered, and observed to his colleague, that though it was natural for a subject of one of the greatest monarchs in the world to think 1800*l.* an inconsiderable sum, yet, for his part, being a subject of an infant state, struggling with infinite inconveniences, and where money was very rare, he must deem it a very considerable sum; and therefore he insisted that it should be accounted for. This was accordingly done; and afterwards it was paid into the hands of Timothy Pickering, Esq; American quarter-master general, to the amount of 2113*l.* 0*s.* sterling, estimating the dollar at 4*s.* 8*d.*—There being a manifest impropriety in the Americans stipulating for the return of the negroes, while they themselves were avowedly fighting for their own liberties, they covered their intention of repossessing them, under these general terms with which the fourth article closed—“It is understood, that any property obviously belonging

to the inhabitants of these states, in the possession of the garrison, shall be subject to be reclaimed."

The posts of York and Gloucester were surrendered on the 19th. The honour of marching out with colours flying, which had been denied Gen. Lincoln, was now refused to Lord Cornwallis; and Lincoln was appointed to receive the submission of the royal army at York-Town, precisely in the same way his own had been conducted about 18 months before. The troops of every kind that surrendered prisoners of war, exceeded 7000 men; but such was the number of sick and wounded, that there were only 3800 capable of bearing arms. The officers and soldiers retained their baggage and effects. Fifteen hundred seamen partook of the fate of the garrison. The Gaudaloupe frigate of 24 guns, and a number of transports were surrendered to the conquerors: about 20 transports had been sunk or burnt during the siege. The land forces became prisoners to congress; but the seamen and ships were assigned to the French admiral. The Americans obtained a numerous artillery, 75 brass ordnance and 69 iron cannon, howitzers and mortars.

Lord Cornwallis endeavoured to obtain permission for the British and German troops to return to their respective countries, under engagements not to serve against France or America; and also an indemnity for those who had joined him: but he was obliged to consent, that the former should be retained in the Governments of Virginia, Pennsylvania and Maryland; and that the latter, whose case lay with the civil authority of the states, should be given to the
unconditional

unconditional mercy of their countrymen. His lordship, however, obtained permission for the Bonetta sloop of war to pass unexamined, which gave an opportunity of screening those of the royalists who were most obnoxious to the resentment of the Americans. He took care also to have it stipulated, that no article of the capitulation should be infringed on pretext of reprisal. His lordship, with all civil and military officers, except those of the latter who were necessarily left behind for the protection and government of the soldiers, were at liberty to go upon parole, either to Great Britain or New York. He acknowledged in his public letter, that the treatment which he and the army had received after the surrender, was perfectly good and proper. His lordship spoke in these warm terms of the kindness and attention shown to them, by the French officers in particular.—“Their deliberate sensibility of our situation, their generous and pressing offers of money, both public and private, to any amount, has really gone beyond what I can possibly describe.”

On the 20th of October, the American commander in chief, congratulated in general orders the army on the glorious event of the preceding day; and tendered to the generals, officers and privates, his thanks in the warmest language. He with gratitude returned his sincere acknowledgments to Gov. Nelson of Virginia, for the succours received from him and the militia under him. To spread the general joy in all hearts, he commanded that those of the army, who were under arrest, should be pardoned and set at liberty. The orders closed with—Divine service

shall

shall be performed to-morrow in the different brigades and divisions. The commander in chief recommends, that all the troops that are not upon duty, do assist at it with a serious deportment, and that sensibility of heart which the recollection of the surprising and particular interposition of Providence in our favour claims."

The British fleet and army destined for the relief of Lord Cornwallis, arrived off the Chesapeake on the 24th; but on receiving authentic accounts of his surrender, they returned to New York. A few days after their first return, the fleet was increased by four ships of the line; but such was the superiority of the French by de Barras's junction with the Count de Grasse, that nothing short of desperate circumstances could justify attempting a fresh engagement. These circumstances however existing, the British naval commanders used all possible expedition in refitting the ships, with the design of extricating Cornwallis and his army. The delay occasioned by this business seemed to be compensated by the arrival of Prince William and Torbay men of war from Jamaica. It was determined that every exertion should be used both by the fleet and army to form a junction with the British force in Virginia. Sir Henry Clinton embarked with about 7000 of his best forces. It was nevertheless the 19th of October before the fleet could sail down to the Hook. They amounted to 25 ships of the line, 2 fifties, and 8 frigates. When they appeared off the Chesapeake, the French made no manner of movement, though they had 36 ships of the line, being satisfied with their present success. The main error, which paved the way

to the capture of the British army, appears to be the omission of sending a larger force from the West Indies than that which was dispatched under Sir Samuel Hood. A few more ships in the first instance might have prevented that most woful disappointment with which both Sir Henry Clinton and Lord Cornwallis have been painfully exercised.

Every argument and persuasion was used with the Count de Grasse to induce him to aid the combined army in an operation against Charleston; but the advanced season, the orders of his court, and his own engagements to be punctual to a certain time fixed for his ulterior operations, prevented his compliance. His instructions had fixed his departure even to the 15th of October; he however early engaged to stay longer. Could he have extended his co-operation two months more, there would most probably have been a total extirpation of the British force in the Carolinas and Georgia. On the 27th, the troops under the Marquis St Simon began to embark for the West Indies; and about the 5th of November the Count de Grasse sailed from the Chesapeake.

The Marquis de la Fayette being about to leave America, the following expressions made a part of the orders issued by him previous to his departure from York Town—"Orders for the first brigade of light infantry, issued by major-general the marquis de la Fayette, Oct. 31, 1781. In the moment the major-general leaves this place, he wishes once more to express his gratitude to the brave corps of light infantry, who for nine months past have been the companions of his fortunes.

fortunes. He will never forget, that with them alone of regular troops; he had the good fortune to manœuvre before an army, which after all its reductions, is still six times superior to the regular force he had at the time." Four days after, this brigade embarked for the Head of Elk; the invalids of the American troops destined for the northward having previously done it. The New Jersey and part of the New York lines marched by land, and were to join the troops which went by water at the Head of Elk. Such cavalry as were wanted by General Greene marched several days before; and on the 5th of November a reinforcement marched under Gen. St. Clair, in order to strenghten him for further offensive operations in South Carolina. The season of the year was unfavourable for the return of the troops to the North river, so that they suffered much in doing it. But they and their comrades had been blessed with a series of the most delightful weather from the beginning of their march towards York Town, until the reduction of the place.

No sooner had congress received and read General Washington's letter, giving information of the reduction of the British army, than they resolved, on the 24th of October, that they would at two o'clock go in procession to the Dutch Lutheran Church, and return thanks to Almighty God, for crowning the allied arms of the United States and France, with success by the surrender of the whole British army under the command of Earl Cornwallis. This army had spread waste and ruin over the face of Virginia for 400 miles on the sea-coast, and for 200 to the westward. Their

Their numbers enabled them to go where they pleased; and their rage for plunder disposed them to take whatever they esteemed most valuable. The reduction of such an army occasioned transports of joy in the breast of every American. But that joy was increased and maintained, by the further consideration of the influence it would have in procuring such a peace as was desired. Two days after, the congress issued a proclamation for religiously observing throughout the United States, the 13th of December, as a day of thanksgiving and prayer. On the 29th of October they resolved, that thanks should be presented to Gen. Washington, Count de Rochambeau, Count de Grasse, and the officers of the different corps, and the men under their command, for their services in the reduction of Lord Cornwallis.—They also resolved to erect in York Town a marble column, adorned with emblems of the alliance between the United States and his Most Christian Majesty; and inscribed with a succinct narrative of the surrender of the British army. Two stands of colours taken from the royal troops, under the capitulation, were presented to Gen. Washington, in the name of the United States in Congress assembled; and two pieces of field ordnance so taken, were by a resolve of Congress, to be presented by Gen. Washington to Count de Rochambeau, with a short memorandum engraved thereon, “that Congress were induced to present them from considerations of the illustrious part which he bore in effectuating the surrender.” It was further resolved to request the Chevalier de Luzerne, to inform his most Christian Majesty, that it was

the wish of Congress, that Count de Grasse might be permitted to accept a testimony of their approbation, similar to that which was to be presented to Count de Rochambeau. Legislative bodies, executive councils, city corporations, and many private societies, presented congratulatory addresses to Gen. Washington, accompanied with the warmest acknowledgments to Count de Rochambeau, Count de Grasse and the other officers in the service of his Most Christian Majesty. Places of public worship resounded with grateful praise to the Lord of Hosts, the God of battles, before, at, and after the day of thanksgiving. The singular interesting event of captivating a second royal army, produced such strong emotions in numbers, both of ministers and people, that they could not wait the arrival of the day.

C H A P. X.

Sir Guy Carleton arrives at New-York with powers to treat of Peace—Different Places evacuated by the British Troops—Independency of America acknowledged—The Army disbanded, and Gen. Washington resigns his Commission—Loss of Men and Treasure by the War.

AS no rational expectation now remained of a subjugation of the colonies, the military operations that succeeded in America were of little consequence. Some inconsiderable actions and

H h

skirmishes

skirmishes did indeed take place after that event; in which the refugees chiefly distinguished themselves, and discovered an inveterate animosity against the Americans. On the 5th of May 1782, Sir Guy Carleton arrived at New-York, being appointed to the command of the British troops in America in the room of Sir Henry Clinton. Two days after his arrival, he wrote a letter to General Washington, acquainting him, that Admiral Digby was joined with himself in a commission to treat of peace with the people of America; transmitting to him, at the same time, some papers tending to manifest the pacific disposition of the government and people of Britain towards those of America. He also desired a passport for Mr Morgan, who was appointed to transmit a similar letter of compliment to congress. General Washington declined signing any passport till he had taken the opinion of congress upon that measure; and by them he was directed to refuse any passport for such a purpose. However, another letter was sent to General Washington, dated the 2d of August, signed by Sir Guy Carleton and Rear-admiral Digby, in which they informed him, that they were acquainted by authority, that negotiations for a general peace had already commenced at Paris; that Mr Grenville was invested with full powers to treat with all the parties at war; and was then at Paris in the execution of his commission. They farther informed him, that his Britannic majesty, in order to remove all obstacles to that peace which he so ardently wished to restore, had commanded his ministers to direct Mr Grenville, that the independency of the thirteen provinces should be proposed

proposed by him, in the first instance, instead of making it the condition of a general treaty. But some jealousies were entertained by the Americans, that it was the design of the British court either to disunite them, or to bring them to treat of a peace separately from their ally the king of France; they therefore resolved, that any man, or body of men, who should presume to make any separate or partial convention or agreement with the king of Great-Britain, or with any commissioner or commissioners under the crown of Great-Britain, ought to be considered and treated as open and avowed enemies of the United States of America; and also, that those states could not with propriety hold any conference or treaty with any commissioners on the part of Great Britain, unless they should, as a preliminary thereto, either withdraw their fleets and armies, or else, in positive or express terms, acknowledge the independency of the said states. They likewise resolved, that any propositions which might be made by the court of Great Britain, in any manner tending to violate the treaty subsisting between them and the king of France, ought to be treated with every mark of indignity and contempt.

In the month of June, the town of Savannah, and the whole province of Georgia, were evacuated by the British troops; as was also Charleston, South-Carolina, about the close of the year. In the mean time, the negotiations for peace being continued, provisional articles of peace were signed at Paris on the 30th of November by the commissioner of his Britannic Majesty and the American commissioners, in which his Majesty ac-

II h 2

knowledge

known as the United Colonies of New-Hampshire, Massachusetts-Bay, Rhode-Island, and Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New-York, New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North-Carolina, South-Carolina, and Georgia, to be "free, sovereign, and independent states." They had constituted themselves such on the 4th of July, 1776; they had been acknowledged such by the French king on the 30th of January 1778, when he concluded with them a treaty of amity and commerce; Holland had acknowledged them as such April 19th 1782; Sweden acknowledged them as such February 5th 1783; Denmark the 25th February, Spain in March, and Russia in July, the same year.

The Definitive Treaty was signed on the 3d of September 1783; and in Aug. Sir Guy Carleton, had received his final orders for the evacuation of New-York. Tuesday, November the 25th, was the day agreed upon for this evacuation. To prevent every disorder which might otherwise ensue from such an event, the American troops under the command of Gen. Knox marched from Haerlem to the Bowery-lane in the morning. They remained there till about one o'clock, when the British forces left the posts in the Bowery, and the Americans marched forward and took possession of the city. This being effected, Gen. Knox and a number of citizens on horseback rode to the Bowery to receive their excellencies Gen. Washington and Governor Clinton, who, with their suits, made their public entry into the city on horseback; followed by the lieutenant-governor and the members of council, for the temporary government of the southern dis-

trict, four abreast—Gen. Knox and the officers of the army eight abreast—citizens on horseback, eight abreast—the speaker of the assembly and citizens on foot, eight abreast. The procession ceased at Cape's tavern. The governor gave a public dinner at Frances's tavern; at which the commander in chief and other general officers were present. The arrangements for the whole business were so well made and executed, that the most admirable tranquility succeeded through the day and night. Soon after this event, the soldiers of the American army, cheerfully resuming the character of citizens, returned peaceably to their respective homes; while their beloved and ever-honoured commander, having taken a pathetic leave of his officers, repaired to Annapolis, and, on the 23d of December, at an audience with Congress (perhaps the most singular and interesting that ever occurred) rising with great dignity, he delivered this address.

“—Mr. President, The great events on which my resignation depended having at length taken place, I have now the honour of offering my sincere congratulations to Congress, and of presenting myself before them, to surrender into their hands the charge committed to me, and to claim the indulgence of retiring from the service of my country.

“Happy in the confirmation of our independence and sovereignty, and pleased with the opportunity afforded the United States of becoming a respectable nation, I resign with satisfaction the appointment I accepted with diffidence—a diffidence in my abilities to accomplish so arduous a task; which however was superseded by a confidence in the rectitude of our cause, the
support

support of the supreme power of the Union, and the patronage of Heaven.

“The successful termination of the war has verified the most sanguine expectations; and my gratitude for the interposition of Providence, and the assistance I have received from my countrymen, increases with every review of the momentous contest.

“While I repeat my obligations to the army in general, I should do injustice to my own feelings not to acknowledge in this place, the peculiar services and distinguished merits of the gentlemen who have been attached to my person during the war. It was impossible the choice of confidential officers to compose my family should have been more fortunate. Permit me, Sir, to recommend in particular those who have continued in the service to the present moment, as worthy of the favourable notice and patronage of Congress.”

“I consider it as an indispensable duty to close this last act of my official life by commending the interests of our dearest country to the protection of Almighty God, and those who have the superintendence of them to his holy keeping.

“Having now finished the work assigned me, I retire from the great theatre of action, and bidding an affectionate farewell to this august body, under whose orders I have so long acted, I here offer my commission, and take leave of all the employments of public life.”

The general was so powerfully impressed, with the great and interesting scenes that crowded in upon his imagination while speaking, that he would have been scarce able to have uttered more than the closing period. He advanced and delivered

He presented to the president his commission, with a copy of his address. Having resumed his place, he received in a standing posture the following answer of Congress; which the president delivered with elegance, but not without such a sensibility as changed, and spread a degree of paleness over his countenance.

“ Sir, The United States in Congress assembled receive, with emotions too affecting for language, the solemn resignation of the authorities under which you have led their troops with success through a perilous and a doubtful war. Called upon by your country to defend its injured rights, you accepted the sacred charge, when it had formed alliances, and whilst it was without funds or a government to support you. You have conducted the great military contest with wisdom and fortitude, invariably regarding the rights of the civil power through all disasters and changes. You have by the love and confidence of your fellow-citizens, enabled them to display their martial genius, and transmit their name to posterity.— You have persevered, till the United States, aided by a magnanimous king and a nation, have been enabled under a just Providence, to close the war in freedom, safety, and independence; on which happy event we sincerely join you in congratulations.

“ Having defended the standard of liberty in the new world: having taught a lesson useful to those who inflict and to those who feel oppression, you retire from the great theatre of action, with the blessings of your fellow-citizens—but the glory of your virtues will not terminate with your military command, it will continue to animate the remotest ages.

“ We

“ We feel with you our obligations to the army in general, and will particularly charge ourselves with the interests, of those confidential officers, who have attended your person to this affecting moment.

“ We join you in commending the interests of our dearest country to the protection of Almighty God, beseeching him to dispose the hearts and minds of its citizens, to improve the opportunity afforded them, of becoming a happy and respectable nation. And for you we address to him our earnest prayers, that a life so beloved, may be fostered with all his care; that your days may be happy as they have been illustrious; and that he will finally give you that reward which this world cannot give.”

Having thus resigned his commission into the hands of the president of that honourable body, he retired from public life amidst the acclamations of his grateful and admiring countrymen.

According to the report of the committee appointed for that purpose, *the Foreign Debt* of the United States incurred by the war, amounted to 7,885,085 dollars, and the *Domestic Debt* to 34,115,290, total, at 4s. 6d. each, equal to 9,450,084l. Sterling, the interest of which at 6 per cent. is 567,005l. But the cost to Great Britain is moderately computed at 115,654,914l. and the additional annual burthen of it 4,557,575l. since January 1775. As to the loss of men during the war, the States of America, it is supposed, lost by the sword and in prison near 80,000 men; and by the British returns at New-York, the number of soldiers killed in the service amounted to 43,633.

FIN 18.

